This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

Educ T 21518.80.233

LIBRARY
OF
Hans C. G. von Jagemann.

HARVARD COLLEGE
LIBRARY

3 2044 102 876 851

WL / CC 0

FRENCH GRAMMAR.

A

FRENCH GRAMMAR,

BASED ON

Philological Principles.

BY

HERMANN BREYMANN, Ph.D.,

Lecturer on French Language and Literature at the Owens College, Manchester.

THIRD EDITION.

London:

MACMILLAN AND CO.

1880.

[*The Right of Translation and Reproduction is reserved.*]

EducT 21518.80.233

HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY
THE BEQUEST OF
H. C. G. von JAGEMANN
JANUARY 10, 1936

LONDON:
R. CLAY, SONS, AND TAYLOR,
BREAD STREET HILL, E. C.

TO

PROFESSOR DIEZ,

THE FOUNDER OF ROMANCE PHILOLOGY,

THIS BOOK IS

Dedicated

IN TESTIMONY OF

THE AUTHOR'S

SINCERE RESPECT AND ADMIRATION.

PREFACE.

WHOEVER ventures on offering a new French Grammar to a public already provided with a considerable number of "Aids," "Grammars," and "Manuals" for learning French, is doubtless under the obligation of stating the reasons why he has undertaken what may at first sight seem so superfluous a task.

Before doing so, I may be allowed to premise a few general remarks on the object at which, in my judgment, all instruction ought to aim. Every kind of instruction must tend to bestow on the student—and here I will make use of terms easily intelligible by a consideration of their primary significance—

1. "Formal Culture;" *i.e.* it must awaken and intensify his powers of reasoning; it must tend to impart to his mind promptitude, precision, and clearness of judgment.

2. "Real Culture;" *i.e.* it must assure to him the acquisition of positive knowledge admitting of being used in practical life, whether this knowledge be of a general or special kind, as designed for a particular profession or calling.

Any teaching which fails to form or educate the mind must remain barren; for of infinitely higher importance than mere knowledge without the power of applying it

is that power itself. A well-trained and clear-sighted intelligence is at all times capable not only of acquiring new stores of positive knowledge, but also of applying it easily and immediately to the various demands of life.

On the other hand, he who has acquired positive knowledge only, without that critical faculty which combines with vigour of decision keenness of judgment, has gained the letter only, but not the spirit. Experience teaches that it is the man whose intellectual powers have been formed by theoretical instruction—who easily applies what he has laboriously learned. For to him and to no other are known those general laws which determine and cover every special case, whether foreseen or unforeseen.

What, then, has been, up to the present time, the method generally followed in teaching French? It has been, and still is, as far as I know, that system of instruction of which the Ollendorff Grammars are popularly regarded as the type. Now, it is quite true, as the distinguished Professor of Sanskrit in Yale College, Mr. William Whitney, remarks, that "such a system has its unquestionable advantages where learning to speak is the main object directly aimed at, and where the smallness of the classes and the time spent with the instructor render it possible for the latter to give each pupil that amount of personal attention and drilling which is needed in order to make the system yield its best results." Yet, there are two serious objections to it. "Firstly, it is"—to quote Mr. Whitney once more—"for the most part impracticable in schools and colleges. Their circumstances and methods of instruction render translation and construction the means by which the most useful knowledge and the best discipline can be gained. To

the very great majority of those who learn *German*"—and I must be allowed to add *French*—"ability to speak is an object inferior in importance to ability to understand those languages accurately and readily: and the attainment of the former is properly to be made posterior to that of the latter. One who has mastered the principles of grammar, and acquired by reading a fair vocabulary and a feeling for the right use of it, will learn to speak and write rapidly and well when circumstances require of him that ability."

The second objection I have to urge against this system is, that it fails fully to satisfy the first of the objects at which every kind of instruction ought to aim; it addresses itself rather to the memory of the learner than to his faculty of judgment; it gives rule after rule, with as many exceptions for each, without making the least attempt to explain them or to give a reason for them. Yet, sharing the view of a recent writer,[1] that the "study of modern languages must be placed on a higher and more scientific foundation" than is at present the case, and that these languages must be taught "according to the more logical method[2] which is applied to the teaching of the dead languages," I hold, firstly, that such a system is not the most practicable, especially for schools and colleges, and, secondly, that instruction in the French language ought to be at once *historical* and *comparative.*

"The study of the history of the changes which have taken place in a language ought not to be stigmatized as unpractical erudition, for erudition is in this instance

[1] See the *Educational Review of French Language and Literature*, p. 21.
[2] The Annual Report of the Delegacy under Statute: "De Examinatione qui non sunt de corpore Universitatis." See the *Educational Review*, p. 7.

the means and not the end;"[1] it awakens, as has been said, and intensifies the powers of reasoning and the faculty of judgment. If we follow the historical and comparative method, most of the grammatical forms which used to be considered irregular appear in quite a different light; as apparent exceptions to the rule, they only serve to confirm it. And in a book recently published by one who speaks with authority on these matters,[2] I read: "There is no longer an excuse why, even in the most elementary lessons—nay, I should say why more particularly in these elementary lessons—the dark and dreary passages of Greek and Latin, of French and German grammar, should not be brightened up by the electric light of Comparative Philology."

This method, far from making the work more difficult for the student, on the contrary, will render it easier and, let us hope, more interesting; because, being based on historical foundations, it is more true than any other, and because it leads the student to see that the different forms of this language have obeyed a substantially uniform action of certain definite laws. If it be true, on the one hand, that the better we understand a thing, the better we are able to learn and to retain it, and, on the other hand, that nothing renders both teaching and learning more cheerful than a clear insight into the living organism of a language, it is certainly not unreasonable to hope that these studies may become more and more domesticated among us. I am the more hopeful that, sooner or later, such a result will be brought about, because it is in accordance with the

[1] *Educational Review*, &c., p. 19.
[2] Max Müller, "Lectures on the Science of Religion," p. 3.

labours and wishes of men whom all teachers of French have to acknowledge as their masters, viz. Diez, Littré, Mätzner, Paris, and Brachet. Whatever there may be good and useful in the present book, it is to them that I owe it.[1] Yet, it will be admitted, I hope, that I have not carried the "*jurare in verba magistri*" too far.

Refusing to look upon modern languages from a merely practical point of view, or to consider them only as so-called social accomplishments which, in many circumstances of life, may be very useful and agreeable, but which are incompetent as means of education, I firmly believe that, taught in the right way, they are entitled to *share* with the ancient languages the task and mission of promoting a true and sound *studium humanitatis*. As it seems to be a quality inherent in man to oppose at first whatever is new to him—be it in the world of ideas or in that of facts—I am prepared to meet with strong opposition from many quarters. Yet, as I shall never be brought to believe that the training of the mind *to think* is valueless, I am not only determined to learn myself more and more the right way of teaching in the spirit of the scholars mentioned above, but I have also set before myself, as the object of my life, to try whether or not young minds will derive from this new system the benefit I confidently expect from it.

It will be seen that the present Grammar is intended to occupy an intermediate position between the elaborate works of *Mätzner*, *Städler*, the *Grammaire des Grammaires*, &c., and the more or less elementary treatises which still

[1] It seems almost unnecessary to say that, besides having studied the works of these scholars, I have, to a certain extent, used other valuable grammars, as those of *Boniface*, *Meissner*, *Schmitz*, *Noël et Chapsal*, *Poitevin*, *Ploetz*, *Körting*, *Eugène*, *Havet*, *Tarver*, *Delille*, &c. I am happy to say that, as to matters of detail, I have learnt at least something from each of them.

continue to be used even in the higher forms of schools, or in colleges. It is not meant for beginners,[1] unless they are of a certain age—say sixteen or seventeen—but for those who, having mastered the very elements of the language, wish for a more systematic and scientific study. They must, therefore, be prepared to find a fuller set of rules than is generally met with in ordinary grammars. The object I have constantly kept in view in drawing up the *Accidence* has been practical utility; the rules, therefore, are given in as few words as possible; all superfluous matter has been left out;[2] and, by the use of different forms of type, the learner is enabled to see what is of immediate importance for him, and what he may leave for a second reading. The *Phonology* ought to be studied *au fur et à mesure, i.e.* as occasion arises, and according to the special want of the learner. As to the *Morphology*, it will be found to differ from that of other grammars in more than one respect. To the Verb has been assigned the first place, since it is the most important part of speech, and one without which it is impossible to form a sentence. Owing to a careful distinction between the root of the Verb and its various terminations, and an altogether new arrangement of the principal and the derived tenses, the Conjugations are, I think, exhibited more conspicuously than in any other grammar with which I am acquainted. A Course of Exercises on the Rules of the Accidence, gradually

[1] To those who begin to study French, I may recommend, as the best book of the kind with which I am acquainted, Eugène's *Elementary Lessons in French*. It is only after having fully mastered this small manual and exercise-book, that they ought to begin the more systematic study of French as set forth in my Grammar.

[2] For instance, all definitions of what a Substantive, an Adjective, a Verb is, since the student is supposed to have learned this part, *i.e.* the logic of grammar, in studying his mother-tongue.

increasing in difficulty, is now preparing, and will be shortly published.

I have also endeavoured to prove, for each of the various parts of speech, the close connection of French with its parent language, *i.e.* to explain how such a great number of forms which seem irregular at first sight only exhibit the regularity with which the gradual change from Latin through Old into Modern French has been brought about, and to show that most of the grammatical forms of the *present* language are capable of being really understood, only when regarded as a development of forms of the *past*. Now, if I were to give such explanations as soon as a rule is laid down, they would stand very much in the way of a perspicuous arrangement of the *matter* which the learner has to impress on his memory. Following the plan adopted by Curtius in his Greek Grammar, I have kept the two parts entirely separate: whilst the *Morphology*, or *Accidence proper*, contains simply the various rules, the *Reasons and Illustrations* add their (if I may use the word) scientific explanation, which appeals not to the memory of the learner, but to his understanding. This Second Part, then, is designed to make him acquainted both with some of the results of Comparative Philology, and with the more important linguistic discoveries of modern philologists. There will be no difficulty for a competent teacher to know how much of the matter contained in the Second Part of the Grammar ought to be explained to the students, if he bears in mind their capacity and their previous training.[1]

[1] I think that, in some cases, the teacher may go even further—that is to say, if he has to deal with learners who have a classical training. When he has, for

In conclusion, I wish to give my cordial thanks to Dr. Ernest Adams and to Mr. E. B. England (of this College) for their kindness in aiding me in the revision of the text of this book.

It is for judges more competent than I am in Modern Philology to say how far I have succeeded in making this Grammar a useful book for more advanced students. If it should prove acceptable, I shall anxiously look for any criticisms which may come from my fellow-workers, and enable me to amend its shortcomings and to render it as perfect as possible; I would then also feel more confident in completing this Grammar by the addition of the Syntax.

Thus I venture to send forth a little work begun in enthusiasm, though finished in a less hopeful spirit. May it bear good fruit!

HERM. BREYMANN.

OWENS COLLEGE,
December 31*st*, 1873.

instance, to explain the various person-endings of the Verb (§§ 300—308), not content with telling the learner that Fr. *ns* or *mes* represent Lat. *mus*, and that Fr. *s* or *tis* represent Lat. *tis*, &c., he might add that Lat. *mus* was originally *ma-si* = *I* and *thou*, i.e. *we*; and Lat. *tis* was *ta-si* = *thou* and *thou*, *i.e. you*. The student will thus be made to understand that the addition of these endings to the root of the Verb is not a mere matter of chance or of arbitrary choice, but that they are the remnants, full of significance, of the old Personal Pronouns common to all the Aryan languages.

To take another example. When the student is told (in § 318, Note 2) that the Verb *aller* forms its Present tense from *vadere*, and its Future and Conditional from *ire*, it would not be out of place to add the further remark that *ire* and *vadere*, although wholly different in form, are originally the same Verb. For *ire* seems to have been only a corrupted form of *baetere* (compare *it-er*, *init-ium*, and the Verbs familiar in Plautus: *per-bit-ere*, *inter-bit-ere*); the root of this Verb is *băt* (as the root of *cadere* is *căd*), which is only a variety of *văd* = *go*, whence *vadere*. Yet, as such explanations, which go beyond Latin, can only be given exceptionally and where the capacity of the learner is rather higher than the average, I have thought it advisable to exclude them altogether from the Grammar.

CONTENTS.

PART I.—PHONOLOGY.

		PAGE
I.	THE ALPHABET	1
II.	CONSONANTS AND VOWELS	2
III.	ORTHOGRAPHICAL SIGNS	2
	A. The Accents	2
	B. The Apostrophe	3
	C. The Diæresis	4
	D. The Cedilla	5
	E. The Hyphen	5
	F. The Signs of Punctuation	5
IV.	GENERAL REMARKS ON PRONUNCIATION	6
	A. Simple Vowels	6
	B. Combined Vowels	6
	C. Nasal Sounds	7
	D. Liquid Sounds	7
	E. Consonants	8
V.	DIVISION OF WORDS INTO SYLLABLES	12
VI.	JUNCTION OF WORDS	12
VII.	USE OF CAPITAL LETTERS	14

PART II.—MORPHOLOGY.

A. ACCIDENCE PROPER.

CHAPTER I.—VERBS.

		PAGE
I.	DIVISION OF THE VERBS	15
II.	VOICES	15
III.	MOODS	16
IV.	INFINITIVES	16
V.	PARTICIPLES	16
VI.	PERSONS AND NUMBERS	17
VII.	TENSES	17
VIII.	AUXILIARY VERBS	17
IX.	CONJUGATIONS OF WEAK AND STRONG VERBS	20
	1. *Weak or Regular Verbs*	20
	A. Division of the Weak Verbs	20
	B. Derivation of Tenses	20
	C. Terminations of the Weak and Strong Conjugations	22
	D. The Three Weak Conjugations	23
	E. Peculiarities of the Weak Verbs	30
	F. Verbs used interrogatively and negatively	36
	G. Passive Voice	40
	H. Reflective Verbs	42
	I. Reciprocal Verbs	46
	K. Intransitive Verbs	46
	L. Impersonal Verbs	48
	2. *Strong or so-called Irregular Verbs*	49
	a. Verbs in *er*	51
	b. Verbs having *i* in the Preterite Definite	57
	c. Verbs having *u* ,, ,, ,,	73
	d. Impersonal and Defective Verbs	95

CHAPTER II.—ARTICLES.

PAGE

I. THE DEFINITE ARTICLE 99
II. THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE 100
III. THE PARTITIVE ARTICLE 101

CHAPTER III.—NOUNS.

I. PLURAL OF NOUNS 103
II. GENDER OF NOUNS 109

CHAPTER IV.—ADJECTIVES.

I. FORMATION OF THE FEMININE 121
II. FORMATION OF THE PLURAL 126
III. COMPARISON 128

CHAPTER V.—PRONOUNS.

I. PERSONAL PRONOUNS 130
II. POSSESSIVE ,, ... 134
III. DEMONSTRATIVE ,, ... 136
IV. INTERROGATIVE ,, ... 139
V. RELATIVE ,, ... 141
VI. THE ADVERBS *en*, *y*, *où*, *dont*, USED AS PRONOUNS . 143
VII. INDEFINITE PRONOUNS 145

CHAPTER VI.—NUMERALS.

I. CARDINAL NUMBERS 156
II. ORDINAL ,, ... 158
III. COLLECTIVE ,, ... 160
IV. FRACTIONAL ,, ... 163
V. MULTIPLICATIVE ,, ... 160

CHAPTER VII.—ADVERBS.

PAGE
I. Place of the Adverb 161
II. Adverbs derived from Adjectives 161
III. Adverbs of Quantity 163
IV. Adverbs of Place 164
V. Adverbs of Time 165
VI. Adverbs of Manner and Quality 165
VII. Adverbs of Affirmation and Negation . . . 166
VIII. Adjectives used as Adverbs 166

CHAPTER VIII.—PREPOSITIONS.

I. Simple Prepositions 167
II. Compound Prepositions 167

CHAPTER IX.—CONJUNCTIONS.

I. Coordinative 171
II. Subordinative 171

CHAPTER X.—INTERJECTIONS.

Interjections 172

B. REASONS AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

INTRODUCTION.

I. Classification 173
II. Elements of the French Language 173
III. Old French and Provençal 177
IV. Modern French 178

I.—VERBS.

PAGE

I. Division of the Verbs 183
II. Weak Verbs 185
III. Voices and Moods generally 187
IV. Table of Latin and French Terminations . . 192
V. Remarks on the Table of Terminations and on the Formation of the Tenses generally . 195
VI. Strong Verbs 207
VII. Auxiliary Verbs 210

II.—ARTICLES.

Articles 211

III.—NOUNS.

I. Preliminary Remark 212
II. Cases and Inflections 213
III. Gender of Nouns 214

IV.—ADJECTIVES.

I. Formation of the Feminine 216
II. Formation of the Plural 219
III. Comparison 221

V.—PRONOUNS.

I. Personal Pronouns 222
II. Possessive Pronouns 223
III. Demonstrative Pronouns 225
IV. & V. Relative and Interrogative Pronouns . 225
VI. Indefinite Pronouns 226

PAGE
VI.—NUMERALS 228

VII.—ADVERBS 230

VIII.—PREPOSITIONS 234

IX.—CONJUNCTIONS 236

X.—INTERJECTIONS 237

FRENCH GRAMMAR.

PART FIRST.—PHONOLOGY.

I. The Alphabet.

1.—The French Alphabet consists of 25 letters, viz.—

	Pronounced.	Named in French.[1]		Pronounced.	Named in French.
A	ah	*a*	N	enn	*enne*
B	bay	*bé*	O	o	*o*
C	say	*cé*	P	pay	*pé*
D	day	*dé*	Q	küh	*ku*
E	a	*é*	R	air	*erre*
F	eff	*effe*	S	ess	*esse*
G	zhay	*gé*	T	tay	*té*
H	ash	*ache*	U	ü	*u*
I	e	*i*	V	vay	*vé*
J	zhee	*ji*	X	eeks	*iks*
K	kah	*ka*	Y	eegrec	*i grec*
L	ell	*elle*	Z	zed	*zède*
M	emm	*emme*			

2.—*Q*, *U*. These two letters have no similar sound in English.

[1] The modern way of naming the letters in French is: *a*, *bé*, *cé*, *dé*, *é*, *fé*, *gé*, (or *gué*), *hé*, *i*, *jé*, *ké*, *lé*, *mé*, *né*, *o*, *pé*, *ké*, *ré*, *sé*, *té*, *u*, *vé*, *ksé*, *i grec*, *zé*.

3.—*W* (double *v*) occurs only in foreign words, and is then pronounced like *V*.

4.—The names of the letters are masculine, except *f, h, l, m, n, r, s*; thus: *un d, le c, une l, une s.*

II. Consonants and Vowels.

5.—There are six *Vowels: a, e, i, o, u, y;* all the other letters are *Consonants,* which, according to the organs of speech used in pronouncing them, are divided into—

A. Mutes.

a. Labials: *p, b, f* (*ph*), *v* (*w*).

b. Dentals: *t* (*th*), *d.*

c. Gutturals: *c, k, q, ch, g, h.*

B. Sibilants: s, z, j.

C. Liquids: l, m, n, r.

Rem. To these letters must be added *x* (= *gs* or *cs*).

III. Orthographical Signs.

A. The Accents.

6.—The Accents, in French, are not *emphatic,* but *phonetic; i.e.* they serve—

a. To denote the peculiar sound of the vowels: *bonté, père;*

b. To recall the etymology of a word: *âpre* (*asper*), *maître* (*magister*);

c. To distinguish words spelt alike but of different signification (see below, *c*).

(1) The *acute* accent, *l'accent aigu* (´), is placed over the vowel *e* when it has the sound of *a* in *pate: bonté, été.*

(2) The *grave* accent, *l'accent grave* (`), is placed—

a. Over the *e* when it has the sound of *a* in *dare*: *très, père;*

b. Over the *a* in *déjà, deçà, au-delà, voilà;*

c. Over the vowel in the following words, to distinguish them from their homonyms :—

à *to*	a *has*	où *where*	ou *or*
çà *here*	ça *this*	dès *since*	des *of the*
là *there*	la *the*		

(3) The *circumflex* accent, *l'accent circonflexe* (^), is placed over any vowel except *y*, in order to mark an open or broad sound, which may be long either naturally (*grâce*, from Lat. *grātia; mânes*, from *mānes*), or from the suppression of a letter (*côte*, Lat. *costa; sûr*, Old Fr. *seür*). This accent is put—

a. Over the *i* of verbs in *aître* and *oître*, whenever this letter is followed by *t*: *il paraît, il naît, il croît* (but: *je crois, tu crois*);

b. Over the vowel of the second syllable but one of the 1st and 2nd Pers. Plur. of the Pret. Def. Ind. and on the vowel preceding the *t* in the 3rd Pers. Sing. of the Pret. Def. Subj. of all verbs: *nous donnâmes, vous donnâtes, qu'il donnât, qu'il finît.*

c. It serves to distinguish the following homonymous words :—

tâche	*task*	tache	*stain*	crû (*p.p. of croître*)		cru (*p.p. of croire*)	
pêcher	*to fish*	pécher	*to sin*				
mûr	*ripe*	mur	*wall*	dû (*p.p. of devoir*)		du (*def. art.*)	
sûr	*sure*	sur	*on*	tû (*p.p. of taire*)		tu, *thou*	

B. The Apostrophe.

7.—The Apostrophe (') marks the elision of one of the final vowels *a, e,* or *i* before a word beginning with a *vowel* or an *h mute.*

a is elided only in *la* (article or pronoun):

l'âme (*for* la âme), *je l'aide* (*for* je la aide).

i is elided only in *si* before *il* or *ils*:

s'il vient; *s'ils* ont (but: *si elle* vient).

e is elided in:

(1) *je, me, te, se; ne, que, de, ce,* except when following the verb:

j'admire; il *n'aura* pas; *c'est* vrai (but: est-*ce* une plaisanterie? donne-*le* au frère de ton ami).

(2) *Quelque* before *un* and *une:*

quelqu'un est venu; *quelqu'une* de *vos amies* (but: quelque autre).

(3) *lorsque, puisque, quoique* before *il, ils, elle, elles, on, un, une.*

puisqu'ils ont écrit (but: *quoique* amis nous nous querellons quelquefois).

(4) *jusque* before *à, au, aux, ici.*

jusqu'à Paris; *jusqu'au* bout du monde.

(5) Certain compound words: *entr'acte, presqu'île, s'entr'aider.*

(But: *entre* eux; c'est *presque* achevé.)

(6) The word *grande* when it stands before *chose, envie, faim, merci, mère, peine, peur, route, tante.*

Ce n'est pas *grand'chose; sa grand'mère.*

Obs. No elision takes place before *oui, huit, huitième, huitaine, onze, onzième, ouate, uhlan; le* onze mai; *la* ouate; *le* oui et le non. (Pronounce also *mais oui* without sounding the *s.*)

C. The Diæresis.

8.—The Diæresis, *le tréma* (¨), marks that the vowel over which it is placed is to be pronounced distinctly from that which precedes it.

Saül, haïr, Moïse = Sa-ul, ha-ir, Mo-ise.

Obs. In words ending in *guë*, the Diæresis indicates that the *u* is pronounced, but not the *e*; in words ending in *gue*, without the Diæresis, the *ue* is mute : *ambiguë, longue.*

D. The Cedilla.

9.—*La cédille* (ç) is placed under the letter *c* before *a, o, u*, in order to give it the sound of *s* : *reçu, garçon, français.*

E. The Hyphen.

10.—*Le tiret*, or *le trait d'union* (-), marks the connection of two or more words. It is used :

a. In interrogative sentences between the verb and the pronouns used as subjects : *Ont-ils pleuré? A-t-il eu?*

b. Between the Imperative of a verb and the pronouns used as objects : *gardez-le, donnez-lui-en, frappez-la.*

N.B. The hyphen is not used when the pronouns are governed by a verb which follows them : *Ose le dire, va lui parler.*

c. Between *même* and the personal pronouns : *moi-même, lui-même, eux-mêmes.*

d. Between *ci, là*, and the words with which they are intimately connected : *celui-ci, cet homme-là, ci-après.*

e. Between the numerals from *seventeen* to *ninety-nine* inclusively, except when *et* is used : *dix-sept, soixante-dix ; quatre-vingt-dix-neuf* (but : *vingt et un, quarante et un*).

f. In compound words : *chef-lieu, Tite-Live, arc-en-ciel.*

11.—*F. The Signs of Punctuation.*

(.) le point	*full stop*
(,) la virgule	*comma*
(;) le point et virgule	*semicolon*
(:) les deux points	*colon*
(?) le point d'interrogation	*point of interrogation*

(!) le point d'exclamation	*point of exclamation*
(...) les points suspensifs	*points of suspension*
( ) la parenthèse	*parenthesis*
(« ») les guillemets	*inverted commas*
} l'accolade	*brackets*

IV. General Remarks on Pronunciation.[1]

12.—*A. Simple Vowels.*

A is mute in *août, aoriste, curaçao, St. Laon, Saône, taon, toast, saoûl* (often spelt *soûl*).

E is mute in *Caen*, in the Past Part., and in the Pret. Def. of *avoir, j'eus, tu eus*, &c.

E sounds like *a* in *femme, hennir, indemnité, solennel, solennité*, and in all adverbs ending in *emment: prudemment, négligemment.*

I is mute in *moignon, oignon, poignard, poignée.*

O is mute in *faon, faonner, Laon, paon, paonne.*

U (generally mute in the syllables *gue, gui, que; guise, figues*) is sounded in *aiguille, aiguiser, inextinguible, linguiste, arguer, linguistique, ambiguité, de Guise.*—In the word *lingual*, the *u* is pronounced *ou.*

13.—*B. Combined Vowels.*

Ai, ei (generally = *a* in *dare; mais, peine*) sounds like *é* in *j'ai, je sais, tu sais, il sait, nous faisons, je faisais* (and in all forms derived from *faisais*), *je donnai,*

[1] The object of this paragraph is not to give a complete treatise on French Pronunciation, but only to point out special cases which deviate from the general rule.

je donnerai (*ai* = *é* in all the 1st Pers. Sing. of the Pret. Def. and of the Fut.).

Ay sounds like *aï* in *Bayonne, Cayenne, Lafayette, Mayence.*

Eu is pronounced like French *u* in the Past Part. and the Pret. Def. of *avoir: eu, j'eus,* &c., and in the word *gageure* (*wager*).

Oe is sounded like *oi* (Eng. *oa*) in *moelle, moelleux, moellon, poêle.*

Oi is sounded like *ais* in *roide, roidement, roideur, roidir.*

14.—*C. Nasal Sounds.*

En, Em,[1] as prefixes retain the nasal sound: *enivrer* (*ang-ne-vray*), *emmener* (*angm-nay*), *encore, ennoblir.*

En in proper names is pronounced like *in: Européen, Vendéen, Mentor, Marengo.*

Ien sounds like *ian* in the middle of words: *oriental, patienter, audience.*

Ien sounds like *iain* at the end of words and in the tenses of *venir* and *tenir; bien; il vient* (but *Le duc d'Enghien* = *angain*).

Um is pronounced *omme: album, pensum.*

M is mute before *n: automne, condamner.*

Except in *amnistie, automnal, calomnie, gymnase, hymne, insomnie.*

N is mute in *monsieur.*

15.—*D. Liquid Sounds.*

L is mute in proper names before *d* and *t: Arnault,*

[1] There is no nasal sound in words taken from other languages: *Abraham, Jérusalem, requiem, Sem, septemvir, amen, Eden, hymen*; except *çuidam* and *Adam.*

Larochefoucauld; and in *baril, chenil, coutil, fils* (= *fisse*), *fusil, gentil, gentilshommes, gril, outil, persil, pouls, soûl, sourcil* (the *l* of *Soult* is heard).

L preceded by *i* has generally the liquid sound: *péril, fille.*[1]

Exc. *L* has the sound of Engl. *l* in *Achille, civil, distiller, il, ils, Lille, mil, mille, osciller, poil, pupille, pusillanime, scintiller, subtil, tranquille, vaciller, village, ville,*[1] *viril.*

N.B. *Avril* and *cil* are pronounced either with the liquid sound (Acad.) or = *avrile, cile.*

Gn has generally the liquid sound: *gagner* (*ga-nyay*); yet the *g* and *n* are pronounced separately in *ag-nat, ig-né, inexpug-nable, stag-nant, stag-nation.*

16.—*E. Consonants.*

B is mute in *Doubs* and *plomb*, but sounded in proper names: *Jacob, Joab, Job, Oreb*, and in *nabob.*

C final is mute whenever it is preceded by a consonant: *clerc, banc, franc, marc* (but sounded in the proper name *Marc*), and in the following words: *almanac, broc, caoutchouc, les échecs* (but sounded in *échec* = *check, repulse*), *escroc, estomac, lacs* (when it means *string, snare;* in *lac, lacs* = *lake*, the *c* is heard), *tabac.*

C takes the sound of *g* in *drachme, second, seconder*, and their derivatives.

Ch sounds like *k* whenever it is followed by a consonant: *Christ*, and in *Achab, Anacharsis, archange, catéchumène, Cham, Chanaan, Chersonèse, chœur, cholèra, choriste, écho, Machiavel, Machabée, Michel-Ange, orchestre.* —*Yacht* is pronounced *iaque.*

D is heard in *Alfred, Cid, David, Joad, Madrid, Sud.*

[1] The reason for the difference of pronunciation in such words as *fille* and *ville* is to be found in the Latin: *fil-i-a* and *vill-a.*

F is mute in *cerf, clef, œuf, un œuf dur, un œuf frais, les œufs, les bœufs, les nerfs, chef-d'œuvre, un nerf de bœuf.*

F is pronounced in *un bœuf, œuf, chef, nerf, serf, les serfs.*

On *neuf:* see § 244, Note.

G final is generally not heard (*poing, faubourg*), yet it is sounded in *bourgmestre, joug, zigzag,* and in proper names: *Canning, Guttenberg* (in *Wurtemberg, g* is not heard).

G is also mute in *Regnard, Regnaud, doigt, legs, signet, vingt.*

On *gn:* see § 15.

H is aspirated in a small number of words, of which the following are those most in use: *hâbler, hableur, hache, hagard, haie, haine, haineux, haïr, haire, hâler, haleter, halle, halo, halte, hamac, hameau, hanche, hangar, hanneton, Hanovre, hanter, haquet, harangue, haranguer, harasser, harceler, hardes, hardi, hareng, hargneux, haricot, haridelle, harnais, harpagon, harpe, harpie, hart, hasard, hâter, haubergeon, haubert, hausse, haut, hautain, hautbois, haute-contre, hautesse, hauteur, heaume, hennir, Henri,*[1] *héraut, hère, hérisser, héron, héros,*[2] *herse, hêtre, heurter, hibou, hideux, hiérarchie, hisser, hobereau, hocher, hochet, Hollande,*[1] *homard, Hongrie,*[1] *honte, hoquet, horde, hors, hors-d'œuvre, houblon, houe, houille, houlette, hourra, houssard, houx, huguenot, huit, huitaine, huppe, hure, huiler, hutte.*

P final is mute except in *cap, croup, hanap.*

P is mute also in *baptême, baptiser, Baptiste, compte, compter, dompter, exempt, prompt, sculpter, sculpteur, sculpture, sept, septième, temps.*

Qu is generally pronounced like *k: quand.*

[1] The *h* of *Henri, Hollande,* and *Hongrie,* is generally mute in conversational language (*de la toile d'Hollande; du vin d'Hongrie*): *h* is always mute in *Henriette.*

[2] All the derivatives of *héros* begin with an *h* mute: *l'héroïne, l'héroïsme, héroïque,* &c.

Qu has the sound of *cu* when the *u* is followed by *e* or *i*: *équestre, équitation.*

Qu is sounded like *cou* when the *u* is followed by *a*: *quaker, équateur.*

Q is mute in *coq d'Inde.*

On *cinq*: see § 244, Note.

R is mute in *Angers, monsieur, messieurs* (it is sounded in *sieur*), *Poitiers, volontiers*, and in all verbs terminating in *er*: *se fier, parler.*

Exc. *amer, cancer, cher, cuiller, enfer, éther, fer, fier* (adj.), *frater, gaster, hier, hiver, magister, mer, pater, ver, Lucifer, Abner, Jupiter*, and other proper names.

S is pronounced like *z* in *Alsace, Asdrubal, balsamique, intransitif, transaction, transiger, transit, transitif*, and whenever it stands between two vowels (*maison, rose*), except *désuétude, monosyllabe, parasol, polysyllabe, préséance, présupposer, vraisemblable, gésir, gisons, gisez, gisent, gisais*, &c. (in *gisant*, *s* is pronounced like *z*).

S is mute at the end of words: *bois, bras, les os*, except *aloès, as, atlas, blocus, bis, chorus, fils, hélas, jadis, iris, laps, maïs, mars, mœurs, l'os, ours, prospectus, rébus, vasistas, vis; Clovis, Genlis, Rubens*, and other proper names (in *Judas* and *Thomas*, *s* is mute).

Although *s* is sounded in *lis, sens*, and *le Christ*, it is *mute* in *fleur de lis, sens commun*, Jésus-*Christ*, and *Antechrist.*

S is mute in *Duguesclin, Dumesnil, Descartes, Despréaux, Dufrêsne.*

S is mute in *tous* when this word is used adjectively (*tous les élèves sont venus*), but *s* is sounded when *tous* is used substantively (*tous ne sont pas venus*).

T final (generally mute) is pronounced in *accessit*,

alphabet, apt, Brest, brut, but, chut, déficit, dot, knout, mat, Nazareth, net, l'ouest, prétérit, subit, toast, vivat, entre le zist et le zest.

Ct are both sounded in *abject, contact, correct, direct, exact, infect, strict, tact, verdict.*

Ct are both mute (or *c* alone is pronounced) in *aspect, circonspect, distinct, indistinct, instinct, respect, suspect.*

Th is mute in *asthme* (pronounced *asm*).

Ti is pronounced like *si:*

(1) in *balbutier* (*nous balbutions* = *sions*), *différentier, minutie, initier, insatiable, patient, satiété, Spartiate;*

(2) in Nouns and Adjectives ending in *tial, tiel, tieux, tion,*[1] *tius, tium; atie, étie, eptie, ertie; martial, essentiel, prophétie, Grotius, action.*

On the pronunciation of *t* in *sept, huit,* and *vingt,* see § 244, Note.

X is generally pronounced like *ks: Alexandre, axe.*

X is pronounced like *k* in words beginning with *exce, exci: exciter, exception.*

X is sounded like *gs:*

(1) in the syllables *ex* or *inex* when they are followed by a vowel or an *h* mute: *exact, examen, inexorable;*

(2) when it is the first letter of a foreign word: *Xénophon.*

X has the sound of *ss* in *soixante, Bruxelles, Auxerre.*

X has the sound of *z* in *deuxième, dixième, sixième, sixain, dix-huit, dix-neuf.*

X final (generally mute: *voix, paix*) is heard in *index, larynx, phénix, préfix, sphinx.*

On the pronunciation of *six* and *dix,* see § 244, Note.

[1] *Ti* retains its natural sound (1) in *verbs* (except those mentioned above), *nous portions;* (2) in words the *t* of which is preceded by *s, t,* or *x: bestial, Attius.*

Z final (generally mute: *nez*) is sounded in *gaz*, *Cortez*, *Metz* (pronounced *Mèce*), *Retz*, *Suez*.

17.—V. Division of Words into Syllables.

A. When a consonant stands between two vowels, it generally begins a syllable: *gé-né-ro-si-té; i-nu-ti-le; ap-pel-le.*

B. A vowel may begin a syllable when it is preceded by another vowel: *fac-ti-on; re-mu-er.*

C. When two consonants stand between two vowels, they belong to different syllables: *fer-mer, gar-der, es-pé-ran-ce, as-su-rer.*

Exc. The following combinations of consonants are never separated, even when they are preceded by one or several consonants:—

(1) *gn, ch, ph, th: a-gneau,*[1] *mou-che, pro-phè-te.*

(2) (*b-, c-, g-, p-,*) *l: sa-ble, dé-clas-ser, ag-glo-mé-rer.*

(3) (*b-, c-, d-, g-, f-, p-, t-, v-*) *r: mar-bre, en-cre, a-dres-ser, a-gro-no-me, of-frir, cons-trui-re, dé-trom-per, ou-vra-ble.*

18.—VI. Junction of Words.

General Rule.—In order to prevent an *hiatus*, the final (and generally *mute*) consonant of a word is sounded with the initial vowel of the following word, when these two words are intimately connected, as in the case of Articles, Adjectives, and Pronouns followed by their Substantives, or Adverbs followed by the Verb or the

[1] When *gn* has not the liquid sound, the two letters are separated: *ag-nat, ig-né.*

Adjective which they qualify: *les⌒enfants, de vains⌒ornements, très intéressant, ils sont⌒arrivés.*

19.—*Special Rules.*

(1) At the end of the first word—

s and *x* are sounded like *z*: *deux⌒amis;*

c and *g* are sounded like *k*: *long⌒ennui;*

d is pronounced like *t*: *grand⌒homme;*

f (in *neuf*) is pronounced like *v*: *neuf⌒enfants.*

(2) Final *n* loses its nasal sound generally in *bien, en,* and in Adjectives and Pronouns, but only when they are intimately connected, by the sense, with the following word: *en⌒Angleterre, mon⌒ami, bien⌒élevé, on⌒entend.* But such combinations as the following would be read without any junction: *son bien | est considérable; parlez-en | à votre père; l'a-t-on | averti?*

(3) Final *p* is heard only in *trop* and *beaucoup: c'est trop aimable* (but *un coup | inattendu*).

(4) Final *r* of words in *ier* and of Infinitives in *er*, is not always sounded *in familiar conversation: le premier | homme; aller | au théâtre.*

(5) Final *s* or *t* after *r* are generally mute: *l'univers | entier; vous avez tort | aussi; les cerfs | et les daims.*

N.B. The plural *arcs-en-ciel* is pronounced like the singular: *arc-en-ciel.*

(6) The *t* of the Conjunction *et* is never sounded: *un vieillard et | un enfant.*

Rem. One calls *cuir* the mistake made especially by children and uneducated people in connecting two words by *s* or *t* where there should be no connection at all, if e.g. *il a été ici* is pronounced: *il a-z-été ici,* or *peu a peu, peu-t-a peu.*

For the sake of euphony, the *cuir* has, in one expression, become the rule: *entre quatre yeux,* which must be pronounced *entre quatre-z-yeux.*

VII. Use of Capital Letters.

20.—Contrary to English usage, Capital Beginning Letters are *not* used in French:

(1) in the names of the Months: *mai, juin, en mars;*

(2) in the names of the Days of the Week: *lundi, mardi;*

(3) in *Adjectives* derived from the names of Nations or Sects: *un livre français; un livre catholique;*

(4) in the word *Dieu* when used as a common noun and speaking of the ancient heathen divinities: *Les dieux des Grecs et des Romains;*

(5) in the word *je*, I.

Rem. Distinguish between *l'État, l'Église*, and *l'état des choses: être en état de...; une église.*

PART SECOND.—MORPHOLOGY.

A. ACCIDENCE PROPER.

CHAPTER I.—VERBS (VERBES).

I. Division of Verbs.[1]

21.—Each verb consists of two parts, viz. the *Root* (*parl-*), and the *Termination* (*-er*), which implies a difference of *person*, *number*, and *tense*.

22.—To conjugate means to *change* the *terminations* of the Infinitive of a verb in its various tenses whilst the *root*, which contains the real meaning, remains *invariable*; thus : *je parl-e ; je parl-ai ; je parl-er-ai*.

23.—As regards their *form*, all French verbs may be divided into two great classes :

A. The Weak, or regular Verbs.
B. The Strong, or so-called irregular Verbs.

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 279.

II. Voices.

24.—There are two Voices:

A. The Active Voice	je loue, *I praise.*
B. The Passive Voice	je suis loué, *I am praised.*

III. Moods.

25.—There are four Moods:

A. The Indicative	je loue, *I praise.*
B. The Subjunctive	que je loue, *may I praise.*
C. The Imperative	loue, *praise* (*thou*).
D. The Conditional	je louerais, *I would praise.*

IV. Infinitives.

26.—We distinguish:

A. The Infinitive Present	louer, *to praise.*
B. The Infinitive Past	avoir loué, *to have praised.*

V. Participles.

27.—There are two Participles:

A. Part. Present (or *Active*):	louant, *praising.*
B. Part. Past (or *Passive*):	loué, *praised.*

VI. Persons and Numbers.

28.—We have to distinguish—

A. The Singular with three persons:

(1) je	*I*
(2) tu	*thou*
(3) il, elle	*he, she, it*

B. The Plural with three persons:

(1) nous	*we*
(2) vous	*you*
(3) ils, elles	*they*

VII. Tenses.

29.—The various *Tenses* of a verb are either *simple* or *compound*:—

Simple Tenses:

1. *Present*	Présent	*je lou-***e**
2. *Preterite*	Passé Défini	*je lou-***ai**
3. *Imperfect*	Imparfait	*je lou-***ais**
4. *Future*	Future Simple	*je lou-***er-ai**
5. *Conditional*	Conditionnel Présent	*je lou-***er-ais**

Compound Tenses:

1. *Preterite Indefinite*	Passé Indéfini	*j'ai lou-***é**
2. *Preterite Anterior*	Passé Antérieur	*j'eus lou-***é**
3. *Pluperfect*	Plusqueparfait	*j'avais lou-***é**
4. *Future Perfect*	Future Antérieur	*j'aurai lou-***é**
5. *Conditional Past*	Conditionnel Passé	*j'aurais lou-***é**

VIII. Auxiliary Verbs.[1]

30.—As the whole Passive Voice and several of the past tenses of the Active of French verbs are formed by means of **avoir** *to have*, and **être** *to be*, these two verbs are called *Auxiliary Verbs.*

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 321

31.— *A.* Avoir, *to have.*

I. Infinitive.	1. Future.	2. Conditional.
to have.	*I shall have.*	*I should have.*
avoir	j' aurai	j' aurais
	tu auras	tu aurais
	il aura	il aurait
	n. aurons	n. aurions
	v. aurez	v. auriez
	ils auront	ils auraient
II. Pres. Ind.	1. Pres. Subj.	2. Imperative.
I have.	*that I may have.*	*have* (thou)
j' ai	que j' aie	—
tu as	que tu aies	aie
il a	qu' il ait	qu'il ait
n avons	que n. ayons	ayons
v. avez	que v. ayez	ayez
ils ont [1]	qu' ils aient	qu'ils aient
III. Pret. Def. Ind.	1. Pret. Def. Subj.	
I had.	*That I might have.*	
j' eus	que j' eusse	
tu eus	que tu eusses	
il eut	qu' il eût	
n. eûmes	que n. eussions	
v. eûtes	que v. eussiez	
ils eurent	qu' ils eussent	
IV. Pres. Part.	1. Imperfect.	
having.	*I had.*	
ayant	j' avais	
	tu avais	
	il avait	
	n. avions	
	v. aviez	
	ils avaient	
V. Past Part.	1. Comp. Tenses.	
had.	*I have had, etc.*	
eu, eue	j' ai }	
	j' eus } eu	
	j' avais }	

[1] See *Reasons*, § 318.

32.— *B.* **Être,** *to be.*

I. Infinitive.	1. Future.	2. Conditional.
to be.	*I shall be.*	*I should be.*
être[1]	je serai	je serais
	tu seras	tu serais
	il sera	il serait
	n. serons	n. serions
	v. serez	v. seriez
	ils seront	ils seraient
II. Pres. Ind.	1. Pres. Subj.	2. Imperative.
I am.	*that I may be.*	*be, let us be.*
je suis	que je sois	—
tu es	que tu sois	sois
il est	qu' il soit	qu'il soit
n. sommes	que n. soyons	soyons
v. êtes[2]	que v. soyez	soyez
ils sont[3]	qu'ils soient	qu'ils soient
III. Pret. Def. Ind.	1. Pret. Def. Subj.	
I was.	*that I might be.*	
je fus	que je fusse	
tu fus	que tu fusses	
il fut	qu' il fût	
n. fûmes	que n. fussions	
v. fûtes	que v. fussiez	
ils furent	qu'ils fussent	
IV. Pres. Part.	1. Imperfect.	
being.	*I was.*	
étant	j' étais	
	tu étais	
	il était	
	n. étions	
	v. étiez	
	ils étaient	
V. Past Part.	1. Comp. Tenses.	
been	*I have been, etc.*	
été	j'ai, j'eus, j'avais } été	

[1] See *Reasons*, § 331. [2] See *ibid.*, § 305. [3] See *ibid.*, § 306

33.—We now give the first person of *all* the Compound Tenses of *Avoir* and *Être*:—

1. Pret. Indef. Indic.	j'ai		*I have had*	(or *been*)
2. Pret Indef. Subj.	que j'aie		*that I may have had*	(or *been*)
3. Pret. Anter. Indic.	j'eus		*I had had*	(or *been*)
4. Pret. Anter. Subj.	que j'eusse	eu	*that I might have had*	(or *been*)
5. Imperfect	j'avais	*or*	*I had had*	(or *been*)
6. Future Perfect	j'aurai	été	*I shall have had*	(or *been*)
7. Conditional Past	j'aurais		*I should have had*	(or *been*)
8. Infinitive Past	avoir		*to have had*	(or *been*)
9. Participle Past	ayant		*having had*	(or *been*)

IX. Conjugations of Weak and Strong Verbs.

I. Weak or Regular Verbs.

A. Division of the Weak Verbs.[1]

34.—These verbs are divided into *Three* Conjugations, according to the terminations of the Infinitive—

I. - er :	*parl*-er	*to speak*
II. - ir :	*bann*-ir	*to banish*
	sent-ir	*to feel*
III. - re :	*vend*-re	*to sell*

B. Derivation of Tenses.

35.—There are *five* Tenses of each verb, from which all the other Tenses may be derived. The latter, therefore, are called *Derived Tenses*, whilst the former are known by the name of *Principal or Primitive Tenses*, they are the following:—

I.	*The Infinitive*	*parl*-er
II.	*The Present Indicative*	*je parl*-e
III.	*The Preterite Definite*	*je parl*-ai
IV.	*The Present Participle*	*parl*-ant
V.	*The Past Participle*	*parl*-é

For Tenses derived, see following page.

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., §§ 279 and 282.

36.—Table of Derivation of the Tenses.

Principal Tenses.

I. Infinitive.

I.	II.	III.
*donn-*er	*bann-*ir	*vend-*re

II. Present Indicative.

I.	II.	III.
*je donn-*e	*je bann i-*s[3]	*je vend-*s
*ils donn-*ent	*ils bann-iss-*ent	*ils vend-*ent

III. Pret. Def. Indicative.

I.	II.	III
*je donn-*ai	*je bann-*is	*je vend-*is
*tu donn-*as	*tu bann-*is	*tu vend-*is

IV. Present Participle.

I.	II.	III.
*donn-*ant	*bann-iss-*ant[3]	*vend-*ant

V. Past Participle.

I.	II.	III.
*donn-*é	*bann-*i	*vend-*u

Derived Tenses.

1. The Future.

By adding *ai* to the Infinitive.

I.	II.	III.
*donn-er-*ai	*bann-ir-*ai	*vend-r-*ai[1]

1. The Present Subjunctive.

By cutting off *nt* of the 3rd person plural.

I.	II.	III.
*que je donn-*e	*que je bann-iss-*e[3]	*que je vend-*e

1. The Preterite Definitive Subjunctive.

By adding *se* to the 2nd person singular.

I.	II.	III.
*que je donn-*asse	*que je bann-*isse	*que je vend-*isse

1. The Imperfect.

By changing *ant* into *ais*.

I.	II.	III.
*je donn-*ais	*je bann-iss-*ais[3]	*je vend-*ais

1. All the Compound Tenses.

I.	II.	III.
*j'ai donn-*é	*bann-*i	*vend-*u
j'eus ,,	,,	,,
j'avais ,,	,,	,,

2. The Conditional.

By adding *ais* to the Infinitive.

I.	II.	III.
*donn-er-*ais	*bann-ir-*ais	*vend-r-*ais[1]

2. The Imperative.

By omitting the pronouns.[2]

I.	II.	III.
*donn-*e	*bann-i-*s[3]	*vend-*s
*donn-*ons	*bann-iss-*ons	*vend-*ons
*donn-*ez	*bann-iss-*ez	*vend-*ez

2. The Present Indicative.

(1st, 2nd, and 3rd person plural) by changing *ant* into *ons, ez, ent.*

I.	II.	III.
*donn-*ons	*bann-iss-*ons[3]	*vend-*ons
*donn-*ez	*bann-iss-*ez	*vend-*ez
*donn-*ent	*bann-iss-*ent	*vend-*ent

2. The Passive Voice.

I.	II.	III.
*je suis donn-*é	*je suis bann-*i	*je suis vend-*u
je fus ,,	*je fus* ,,	*je fus* ,,
j' étais ,,	*j' étais* ,,	*j' étais* ,,

[1] The end *-e* of *vendre* disappears before the beginning vowel of the termination *ai* and *ais* (*cp.* onze, douze, and *onzième*, *douzième*).

[2] The *s* of the 2nd person singular of verbs of the 1st conjugation is dropped.

[3] In the Pres. (Ind. and Subj.), Imperat., Pres. Partic., and Imperf., *inchoative* verbs of the 2nd conjugation insert b-between the *root* and the various *terminations* (see § 37) *iss* before a *vowel*, and only *i* before a *consonant* (see § 39).

37.—C. Terminations of the Weak and Strong Conjugations.

Principal Tenses.

I. Infinitive.

I.	II.	III.
er	*ir*	*re* (oir)[1]

II. Pres. Ind.

I.	II.	III.
e	*s*	*s*
es	*s*	*s*
e	*t*	—(*t*)
	ons	
	ez	
	ent	

III. Pret. Def. Ind.

I.	II.	III.
ai	*is*	*is*[1]
as	*is*	*is*
a	*it*	*it*
âmes	*îmes*	*îmes*
âtes	*îtes*	*îtes*
èrent	*irent*	*irent*

IV. Pres. Part.

I.	II.	III.
	ant	

V. Past Part.

I.	II.	III.
é	*i*	*u*

Derived Tenses.

1. Future.

I.	II.	III.
	ai	
	as	
	a	
	ons	
	ez	
	ont	

2. Conditional.

I.	II.	III.
	ais	
	ais	
	ait	
	ions	
	iez	
	aient	

1. Pres. Subj.

I.	II.	III.
	e	
	es	
	e	
	ions	
	iez	
	ent	

2. Imperative.

I.	II.	III.
	—	
e	*s*	*s*
	e	
	ons	
	ez	
	ent	

1. Pret. Def. Subj.

I.	II.	III.
asse	*isse*	*isse*
asses	*isses*	*isses*
ât	*ît*	*ît*
assions	*issions*	*issions*
assiez	*issiez*	*issiez*
assent	*issent*	*issent*

1. Imperfect.

I.	II.	III.
	ais	
	ais	
	ait	
	ions	
	iez	
	aient	

2. Pres. Ind. 1, 2, and 3 p. pl.

I.	II.	III.
	—	
	—	
	—	
	ons	
	ez	
	ent	

1. Comp. Tenses.

2. Pass. Voice.

[1] The greater part of the *strong* verbs, whether they end in *re* or *oir*, have *us* as their termination in the Preterite (Ind. and Subj.) *croire*, cr-us, cr-us, cr-ut, cr-ûmes, &c. ; *devoir*, d-us, d-us, d-ut, &c.

38.—*D.* The Three Weak Conjugations.

1. *Model of the First Conjugation*—**Parler**, *to speak.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. *to speak.* parl-*er*	1. Future. *I shall speak.* je parl-er-*ai* tu parl-er-*as* il parl-er-*a* n. parl-er-*ons* v. parl-er-*ez* ils parl-er-*ont*	2. Conditional. *I should speak* je parl-er-*ais* tu parl-er-*ais* il parl-er-*ait* n. parl-er-*ions* v. parl-er-*iez* ils parl-er-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. *I speak.* je parl-*e* tu parl-*es* il parl-*e* (n. parl-*ons*) (v. parl-*ez*) (ils parl-*ent*)	1. Pres. Subj. *that I may speak* que je parl-*e* que tu parl-*es* qu' il parl-*e* que n. parl-*ions* que v. parl-*iez* qu'ils parl-*ent*	2. Imperative. *speak, let us speak.* — parl-*e*[1] qu'il parl-*e* parl-*ons* parl-*ez* qu'ils parl.*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. *I spoke* je parl-*ai* tu parl-*as* il parl-*a* n. parl-*âmes* v. parl-*âtes* ils parl-*èrent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. *that I might speak.* que je parl-*asse* que tu parl-*asses* qu' il parl-*ât* que n. parl-*assions* que v. parl-*assiez* qu'ils parl-*assent*	
IV. Pres. Part. *speaking.* parl-*ant*	1. Imperfect. *I was speaking.* je parl-*ais* tu parl-*ais* il parl *ait* n. parl-*ions* v. parl-*iez* ils parl-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. *we speak, etc.* — — — n. parl-*ons* v. parl-*ez* ils parl-*ent*
V. Past Part. *spoken* parl-*é, ée*	1. Comp. Tenses. *I have, had, etc., spoken.* j'ai / j'eus / j'avais } parl-*é*	2. Pass. Voice. *It is, was spoken.* il est / il fut / il était } parl-*é*

[1] The 2nd Pers. Sing. of the Imperative of the 1st Conjugation takes an *s* before the pronouns *en* and *y*: *donnes-en*; *portes-y*. No *s* is added when this person is followed by the preposition *en*.

39.—2. *Model of the Second Conjugation—A. Inchoative. Form*—**Bannir**,[1] *to banish.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. *to banish.* bann-*ir*	1. Future. *I shall banish.* je bann-ir-*ai* tu bann-ir-*as* il bann-ir-*a* n. bann-ir-*ons* v. bann-ir-*ez* ils bann-ir-*ont*	2. Conditional. *I should banish.* je bann-ir-*ais* tu bann-ir-*ais* il bann-ir-*ait* n. bann-ir-*ions* v. bann-ir-*iez* ils bann-ir-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. *I banish* je bann-*i-s* tu bann-i-*s* il bann-i-*t* (n. bann-iss-*ons*) (v. bann-iss-*ez*) (ils bann-iss-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. *that I may banish* q. je bann-iss-*e* q. tu bann-iss *es* qu'il bann-iss-*e* q. n. bann-iss-*ions* q. v. bann-iss-*iez* qu'ils bann-iss-*ent*	2. Imperative. *banish, let us banish.* — bann-i-*s* qu'il bann-iss-*e* bann-iss-*ons* bann-iss-*ez* qu'ils bann-iss-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. *I banished.* je bann-*is* tu bann-*is* il bann-*it* n. bann-*îmes* v. bann-*îtes* ils bann-*irent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. *that I might banish.* q. je bann-*isse* q. tu bann-*isses* qu'il bann-*ît* q. n. bann-*issions* q. v. bann-*issiez* qu'ils bann-*issent*	
IV. Pres. Part. *banishing* bann-iss-*ant*	1. Imperfect. *I was banishing* je bann-iss-*ais* tu bann-iss-*ais* il bann-iss-*ait* n. bann-iss-*ions* v. bann-iss-*iez* ils bann-iss *aient*	2. Pres. Ind. *we banish, etc.* — — — n. bann-iss-*ons* v. bann-iss-*ez* ils bann-iss-*ent*
V. Past Part. *banished* bann-*i, ie*	1. Comp. Tenses. *I have, had, etc., b.* j'ai / j'eus / j'avais } bann-*i*	2. Pass. Voice. *I am, was, etc., b.* je suis / je fus / j'étais } bann-*i, ie*

[1] Like *bannir* are conjugated all weak verbs in *ir*, except those mentioned in §§ 40—42.

40.—*B. Simple Form*—Sentir,[1] *to feel.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. *to feel.* sent-*ir*	1. Future. *I shall feel.* je sent-ir-*ai* tu sent-ir-*as* il sent-ir-*a* n. sent-ir-*ons* v. sent-ir-*ez* ils sent-ir-*ont*	2. Conditional. *I should feel.* je sent-ir-*ais* tu sent-ir-*ais* il sent-ir-ait n. sent-ir-*ions* v. sent-ir-*iez* ils sent-ir-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. *I feel.* je sen-*s* tu sen-*s* il sent- (n. sent-*ons*) (v. sent-*ez*) (ils sent-*ent*)	1. Pres. Subj. *that I may feel.* que je sent-*e* que tu sent-*es* qu' il sent-*e* que n. sent-*ions* que v. sent-*iez* qu' ils sent-*ent*	2. Imperative. *feel* (thou). — sen-*s* qu'il sent-*e* sent-*ons* sent-*ez* qu'ils sent-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. *I felt.* je sent-*is* tu sent-*is* il sent-*it* n. sent-*îmes* v. sent-*îtes* ils sent-*irent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. *that I might feel.* que je sent-*isse* que tu sent-*isses* qu' il sent-*ît* que n. sent-*issions* que v. sent-*issiez* qu' ils sent-*issent*	
IV. Pres. Part. *feeling.* sent-*ant*	1. Imperfect. *I was feeling.* je sent-*ais* tu sent-*ais* il sent-*ait* n. sent-*ions* v. sent-*iez* ils sent-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. *we feel, you feel, etc.* — — — n. sent-*ons* v. sent-*ez* ils sent-*ent*
V. Past Part. *felt* sent-*i, ie*	1. Comp. Tenses. *I have, had, etc., felt.* j'ai j'eus } sent-*i* j'avais	2. Pass. Voice. *It is, was, etc., felt.* il est il fut } sent-*i* il était

[1] On *sentir*, see *Reasons and Illustrations*, § 314.

41.—Conjugate in the same manner not only **mentir**, *to lie*, and **se repentir**, *to repent*, but also—

Infin......	dorm-*ir*, *to sleep*	part-*ir*,[1] *to set out*
Pres. Ind...	je dor-*s*, tu dor-*s*, il dor-*t*	je par-*s*, tu-par-*s*, il part-
	n. dorm-*ons*, *-ez*, *-ent*	n. part-*ons*, *-ez*, *-ent*
Pret. Def...	je dorm-*is*	je part-*is*
Pres. Part..	dorm-*ant*	part-*ant*
Past Part...	dorm-*i*	part-*i*

Infin......	serv-*ir*,[2] *to serve*	sort-*ir*,[3] *to go out*
Pres. Ind...	je ser-*s*, tu ser-*s*, il ser-*t*	je sor-*s*, tu sor-*s*, il sort-
	n. serv-*ons*, *-ez*, *-ent*	n. sort-*ons*, *-ez*, *-ent*
Pret. Ind...	je serv-*is*	je sort-*is*
Pres. Part..	serv-*ant*	sort-*ant*
Past Part..	serv-*i*	sort-*i*

42.—*Anomalous Verbs.* The following Verbs are also conjugated like *sentir*, but they have in one or more tenses an *anomalous* form.

43.—(1) **Ouvrir, couvrir, souffrir, offrir,** deviate from the conjugation of *sentir*

(*a*) in the Past Participle: *ouvert, couvert, souffert, offert.*

(*b*) in the Present Indicative and the tenses derived from it (Pres. Subj. and Imperat.)

j' ouvr-*e*[4]	que j' ouvr-*e*	—
tu ouvr-*es*	que tu ouvr-*es*	ouvr-*e*
il ouvr-*e*	qu' il ouvr-*e*	qu'il ouvr-*e*
n. ouvr-*ons*	que n. ouvr-*ons*	ouvr-*ons*
v. ouvr-*ez*	que v. ouvr-*ez*	ouvr-*ez*
ils ouvr-*ent*	qu' ils ouvr-*ent*	qu'ils ouvr-*ent*

[1] **Repartir** = (1) *to set out again*, (2) *to reply*, is conjugated like *partir*.
Répartir = *to distribute, to divide*, like *bannir*: *je répartis, nous répartissons*; *je répartissais*; *répartissant*. (See also *Reasons*, &c., § 285.)

[2] **Asservir** = *to enslave*, is conjugated like *bannir*.

[3] **Ressortir** = *to go out again*, is conjugated like *sortir*; but when it means *to be in the jurisdiction of*, it is conjugated like *bannir*.

[4] See *Reasons and Illustrations*, § 300.

Similarly *je couvre, n. couvrons ; je souffre, n. souffrons ; j'offre, n. offrons.*

44.—(2) **Assaillir,** *to assail,* and **tressaillir,**[1] *to tremble,* deviate in the Present and in the tenses derived from it :—

Infin......	assaill-*ir*	
Pres. Ind...	j' assaill-*e*, tu assaill-*es*, il assaill-*e*	
	n. assaill-*ons*, v. assaill-*ez*, ils assaill-*ent*	
Pret. Def...	j' assaill-*is*. *Pret. Def. Subj.*	que j' assaill-*isse*
	tu assaill-*is*	que tu assaill-*isses*
	il assaill-*it*	qu' il assail-*lt*
	n. assaill-*îmes*	que n. assaill-*issions*
	v. assaill-*îtes*	que v. assaill-*issiez*
	ils assaill-*irent*	qu' ils assaill-*issent*
Pres. Part..	assaill-*ant*. *Imperf.* j'assaill-*ais*	
Past Part..	assaill-*i*	

45.—(3) **Cueillir,** *to gather,* is anomalous in the same tenses *and* in the Future and Conditional :—

Infin......	cueill-*ir*. *Fut.* je cueill-*er-ai*.	*Condit.* je cueill-*er-ais*
Pres. Ind...	je cueill-*e*, tu cueill-*es*, il cueill-*e*	
	n. cueill-*ons*, v. cueill-*ez*, ils cueill-*ent*	
Pret. Def...	je cueill-*is*. *Pret. Def. Subj.*	que je cueill-*isse*
	tu cueill-*is*	que tu cueill-*isses*
	il cueill-*it*	qu' il cueill-*lt*
	n. cueill-*îmes*	que n. cueill-*issions*
	v. cueill-*îtes*	que v. cueill-*issiez*
	ils cueill-*irent*	qu' ils cueill-*issent*
Pres. Part..	cueill-*ant*	
Past. Part.	cueill-*i*	

46.—(4) **Bouillir,** *to boil,*[2] is anomalous in the Present Indicative and the tenses derived from it :—

[1] **Saillir** is conjugated like *bannir* when it means *to gush forth.* The only forms in general use are the 3rd Pers. Sing. Pres. *il saillit,* Pret. Def. *il saillit,* Imperf. *il saillissait ;* Int. *il saillira,* Cond. *il saillirait,* Pres. Part. *saillissant,* Past Part. *sailli.* If *saillir* is used in the sense of *to project,* it has only the following forms : *il saille, ils saillent ; il aillait ; il saillera ; qu'il saille.*

[2] Used as a transitive verb, *i.e.* followed by a direct object, **bouillir** must be preceded by the various tenses of *faire : Je ferai bouillir quelques pommes de terre,* I shall boil some potatoes ; *Il fit bouillir la viande,* He boiled the meat.

Infin.	bouill-*ir*.	*Fut.* bouill-ir-*ai*.	*Condit.* bouill-ir-*ais*
Pres. Ind..	je bou-*s*, tu bou-*s*, il bou-*t*.		
	n. bouill-*ons*, v. bouill-*ez*, ils bouill-*ent*		
	Pres. Subj. que je bouill-*e*.		*Imperat.* bou-*s*
	que tu bouill-*es*		
	qu' il bouill-*e*		
	que n. bouill-*ions*		
	que v. bouill-*iez*		
	qu' ils bouill-*ent*		
Pret. Def..	je bouill-*is*.	*Pret. Def. Subj.*	que je bouill-*isse*.
	tu bouill-*is*		que tu bouill-*isses*
	il bouill-*it*		qu' il bouill-*it*
	n. bouill-*îmes*		que n. boull-*issions*
	v. bouill-*îtes*		que v. bouill-*issiez*
	ils bouill-*irent*		qu' ils bouill-*issent*
Pres Part.	bouill-*ant*		
Past Part.	bouill-*i*		

47.—(5) On the change of *i* into *y* in **Fuir**, *to flee*,[1] see below; **vêtir**, *to clothe*, is anomalous only in the Past Participle :—

Infin..	fu-*ir*	vêt-*ir*
Pres. Ind...	je fui-*s*, tu fui-*s*, il fui-*t*	je vêt-*s*, tu vêt-*s*, il vêt-
	n. fuy-*ons*, v. fuy-*ez*, ils fui-*ent*	n. vêt-*ons*, v. vêt-*ez*, ils vêt-*ent*
	Pres. Subj. que je fui-*e*	que je vêt-*e*
	que tu fui-*es*	que tu vêt-*es*
	qu' il fui-*e*, &c.	qu' il vêt-*e*, &c.
	Imp. —	—
	fui-*s*	vêt-*s*
	fuy-*ons*	vêt-*ons*
	fuy-*ez*	vêt-*ez*
Pret. Def...	je fu-*is*, tu fu-*is*, il fu-*it*	je vêt-*is*, tu vêt-*is*, il vêt-*it*
	n. fu-*îmes*, v. fu-*îtes*, ils fu-*irent*	n. vêt-*îmes*, v. vêt-*îtes*, ils vêt-*irent*
	Pret. Def. Subj. q. je fu-*isse*, *-isses*, *-ît*, &c.	que je vêt-*isse*, *-isses*, *-ît*, &c.
Pres. Part..	fuy-*ant*	vêt-*ant*
Past Part...	fu-*i*	vêt-*u*

[1] Like **fuir** is conjugated the verb **s'enfuir**, *to run away*. The *en* is never separated from *fuir*, as it is the case in *s'en aller*, thus : *je m'enfuis, tu t'enfuis, il s'enfuit ; je me suis enfui ; je m'étais enfui*, &c.

48.—3. *Model of the Third Conjugation*—**Vendre**, *to sell.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. *to sell.* vend-*re*	1. Future. *I shall sell.* je vend-r-*ai* tu vend-r-*as* il vend-r-*a* n. vend-r-*ons* v. vend-r-*ez* ils vend-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. *I should sell.* je vend-r-*ais* tu vend-r-*ais* il vend-r-*ait* n. vend-r-*ions* v. vend-r-*iez* ils vend-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. *I sell.* je vend-*s* tu vend-*s* il vend (n. vend-*ons*) (v. vend-*ez*) (ils vend-*ent*)	1. Pres. Subj. *that I may sell.* que je vend-*e* que tu vend-*es* qu' il vend-*e* que n. vend-*ions* que v. vend-*iez* qu' ils vend-*ent*	2. Imperative. *sell, let us sell.* vend-*s* qu'il vend-*e* vend-*ons* vend-*ez* qu'ils vend-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. *I sold.* je vend-*is* tu vend-*is* il vend-*it* n. vend-*îmes* v. vend-*îtes* ils vend-*irent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. *that I might sell.* que je vend-*isse* que tu vend-*isses* qu' il vend-*ît* que n. vend-*issions* que v. vend-*issiez* qu' ils vend-*issent*	
IV. Pres. Part. *selling.* vend-*ant*	1. Imperfect. *I was selling.* je vend-*ais* tu vend-*ais* il vend-*ait* n. vend-*ions* v. vend-*iez* ils vend-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. *we sell, etc.* — — — n. vend-*ons* v. vend-*ez* ils vend-*ent*
V. Past Part. *sold.* vend-*u*, -*ue*	1. Comp. Tenses. *I have, had, etc., sold.* j'ai / j'eus / j'avais } vend-*u*	2. Pass. Voice. *I am, was, etc., sold.* je suis / je fus / j' étais } vend-*u*, -*ue*

49.—The Compound Tenses of *parler*, *bannir*, *sentir*, and *vendre*:—

1. Pret. Indef. Indic.	*j'ai*		*I have spoken*, &c.
2. Pret. Indef. Subj.	*que j'aie*		*That I may have spoken*
3. Pret. Ant. Indic.	*j'eus*		*I had spoken*, &c.
4. Pret. Ant. Subj.	*que j'eusse*	*parl*-é *bann*-i	*That I might have spoken*
5. Pluperfect	*j'avais*	*sent*-i	*I had spoken*, &c.
6. Future Perfect	*j'aurai*	*vend*-u	*I shall have spoken*
7. Conditional Past	*j'aurais*		*I should have spoken*
8. Infinitive Past	*avoir*		*To have spoken*
9. Participle Past	*ayant*		*Having spoken*

Note.—For the three English forms of the Present Indicative and of the Imperfect *I speak*, *I am speaking*, *I do speak*; and *I spoke*, *I was speaking*, *I did speak*, there is only one form in French: *je parle* and *je parlais*.

E. Peculiarities of the Weak Verbs.

FIRST CONJUGATION.

50.—Verbs in -ger insert *e* before *a* and *o*. Verbs in -cer take a cedilla under the *c* before *a* and *o*[1]:—

Present Indic.	*Pret. Def. Ind.*	*Pret. Def. Subj.*
je mang-*e*	je mange-*ai*	que je mange-*asse*
tu mang-*es*	tu mange-*as*	que tu mange-*asses*
il mang-*e*	il mange-*a*	qu' il mange-*ât*
n. mange-*ons*	n. mange-*âmes*	que n. mange-*assions*
v. mang-*ez*	v. mange-*âtes*	que v. mange-*assiez*
ils mang-*ent*	ils mang-*èrent*	qu' ils mange-*assent*

Imperfect.	*Imperative.*	*Present Part.*
je mange-*ais*	—	mange-*ant*
tu mange-*ais*	mang-*e*	
il mange-*ait*	qu'il mang-*e*	
n. mang-*ions*	mange-*ons*	
v. mang-*iez*	mang-*ez*	
ils mange-*aient*	qu'ils mang-*ent*	

[1] The *g* and the *c* thus retain the soft sound they have in the Infinitive.

Thus : *je commenc-e*, but *nous commenç-ons*.

51.—Verbs having *e* mute in the penultimate (**mener**) take a grave accent whenever the *e* of the following syllable becomes mute :—

Pres. Ind.	*Pres. Subj.*	*Imperat.*
je mèn-*e*	que je mèn-*e*	—
tu mèn-*es*	que tu mèn-*es*	mèn-*e*
il mèn-*e*	qu' il mèn-*e*	qu'il mèn-*e*
n. men-*ons*	que n. men-*ions*	men-*ons*
v. men-*ez*	que v. men-*iez*	men-*ez*
ils mèn-*ent*	qu' ils mèn-*ent*	qu'ils mèn-*ent*

Future.	*Conditional.*
je mèn-er-*ai*	je mèn-er-*ais*
tu mèn-er-*as*	tu mèn-er-*ais*
il mèn-er-*a, etc.*	il mèn-er-*ait, etc.*

52.—Verbs having *é* in the penultimate **posséder** take a grave accent in the *Present* (*Ind.* and *Subj.*) and *Imperative*, but retain the *é* in the *Future* and *Conditional* :—

Pres. Ind.	*Pres. Subj.*	*Imperat.*
je possèd-*e*	que je possèd-*e*	—
tu possèd-*es*	que tu possèd-*es*	possèd-*e*
il possèd-*e*	qu' il possèd-*e*	qu'il possèd-*e*
n. posséd-*ons*	que n. posséd-*ions*	posséd-*ons*
v. posséd-*ez*	que v. posséd-*iez*	posséd-*ez*
ils possèd-*ent*	qu' ils possèd-*ent*	qu'ils possèd-*ent*

Future.	*Conditional.*
je posséd-er-*ai*	je posséd-er-*ais*
tu posséd-er-*as*	tu posséd-er-*ais*
il posséd-er-*a, etc.*	il posséd-er-*ait, etc.*

53.—Verbs in **eler** and **eter** (*appeler*, *jeter*) double the *l* or the *t* whenever the *e* of the following syllable becomes mute :—

Pres. Ind.	*Pres. Subj.*	*Imperative.*
j' appell-*e*	que j' appell-*e*	—
tu appell-*es*	que tu appell-*es*	appell-*e*
il appell-*e*	qu' il appell-*e*	qu'il appell-*e*
n. appel-*ons*	que n. appel-*ions*	appel-*ons*
v appel-*ez*	que v. appel-*iez*	appel-*ez*
ils appell-*ent*	qu'ils appell-*ent*	qu'ils appell-*ent*

Future.	*Conditional.*
j' appell-er-*ai*	j' appell-er-*ais*
tu appell-er-*as*	tu appell-er-*ais*
il appell-er-*a*, *etc.*	il appell-er-*ait*

Pres. Ind.	*Pres. Subj.*	*Imperative.*
je jett-*e*	que je jett-*e*	—
tu jett-*es*	que tu jett-*es*	jett-*e*
il jett-*e*	qu' il jett-*e*	qu'il jett-*e*
n. jet-*ons*	que n. jet-*ions*	jet-*ons*
v. jet-*ez*	que v. jet-*iez*	jet-*ez*
ils jett-*ent*	qu' ils jett-*ent*	qu'ils jett-*ent*

Future.	*Conditional.*
je jett-er-*ai*	je jett-er-*ais*
tu jett-er-*as*	tu jett-er-*ais*
il jett-er-*a*, *etc.*	il jett-er-*ait*, *etc.*

54.—Exception I. *Peler*,[1] *celer*, *geler*, *dégeler*, *bourreler*, *harceler*; *acheter*, *étiqueter*, *colleter* (and their compounds) never double *l* or *t*, but take the *grave accent* on the penultimate *e*.

55.—Exception II. *Crocheter*,[2] *dépaqueter*, *empaqueter*, *épousseter*, *feuilleter*, take the *grave accent* only in the *Present* (*Ind.* and *Subj.*) and in the *Imperative*, but retain the *e* mute in the *Future* and *Conditional*:—

[1] *Peel, hide, freeze, thaw, torment, annoy; buy, label, take by the collar.*
[2] *Pick a lock, unpack, pack up, dust, turn over the leaves.*

56.— *Pres. Ind.*	*Pres. Subj.*	*Imperative.*
je pèl-*e*	que je pèl-*e*	—
tu pèl-*es*	que tu pèl-*es*	pèl-*e*
il pèl-*e*	qu' il pèl-*e*	qu'il pèl-*e*
n. pel-*ons*	que n. pel-*ions*	pel-*ons*
v. pel-*ez*	que v. pel-*iez*	pel-*ez*
ils pèl-*ent*	qu' ils pèl-*ent*	qu'ils pèl-*ent*

Future.	*Conditional.*
je pèl-er-*ai*	je pèl-er-*ais*
tu pèl-er-*as, etc.*	tu pèl-er-*ais, etc.*

57.— *Pres. Ind.*	*Pres. Subj.*	*Imperative.*
j' achèt-*e*	que j' achèt-*e*	—
tu achèt-*es*	que tu achêt-*es*	achèt-*e*
il achèt-*e*	qu' il achèt-*e*	qu'il achèt-*e*
n. achet-*ons*	que n. achet-*ions*	achet-*ons*
v. achet-*ez*	que v. achet-*iez*	achet-*ez*
ils achèt-*ent*	qu' ils achèt-*ent*	qu'ils achèt-*ent*

Future.	*Conditional.*
j' achèt-er-*ai*	j' achèt-er-*ais*
tu achèt-er-*as, etc.*	tu achèt-er-*ais, etc.*

58.— *Pres. Ind.*	*Pres. Subj.*	*Imperative.*
je feuillèt-*e*	que je feuillèt-*e*	—
tu feuillèt-*es*	que tu feuillèt-*es*	feuillèt-*e*
il feuillèt-*e*	qu' il feuillêt-*e*	qu'il feuillèt-*e*
n. feuillet-*ons*	que n. feuillet-*ons*	feuillet-*ons*
v. feuillet-*ez*	que v. feuillet-*ez*	feuillet-*ez*
ils feuillèt-*ent*	qu' ils feuillèt-*ent*	quil's feuillèt-*ent*

Future.	*Conditional.*
je feuillet-er-*ai*	je feuillet-er-*ais*
tu feuillet-er-*as, etc.*	tu feuillet-er-*ais, etc.*

59.—Verbs in **éger** retain the *é fermé* throughout: *j'abrége, tu abréges; j'abrégeai; j'abrégerai*, &c.

60.—Verbs in **ayer, oyer, uyer,** change *y* into *i* before an *e* mute.

Note.—Those in *ayer* may retain the *y*: *payer; je paie* and *je paye; je paierai* and *je payerai.* The *Future* and *Conditional* have sometimes the contracted forms *je patrai, je patrais.*

61.—

Pres. Ind.	*Pres. Subj.*	*Imperative.*
j' emploi-*e*	que j' emploi-*e*	—
tu emploi-*es*	que tu emploi-*es*	emploi-*e*
il emploi-*e*	qu' il emploi-*e*	qu'il emploi-*e*
n. employ-*ons*	que n. employ-*ions*	employ-*ons*
v. employ-*ez*	que v. employ-*iez*	employ-*ez*
ils emploi-*ent*	qu' ils emploi-*ent*	qu'ils emploi-*ent*

Future.	*Conditional.*
j' emploi-er-*ai*	j' emploi-er-*ais*
tu emploi-er-*as*	tu emploi-er-*ais*
il emploi-er-*a, etc.*	il emploi-er-*ait*

62.—**Envoyer** and **renvoyer** have in the Future *j'enverrai, je renverrai,* &c.; in the other tenses they are conjugated like *employer.*

63.—A *trema* is placed over the *i* after *u* in verbs ending in *ouer, uer*:[1] *nous tuïons; vous jouïez.*

64.—The following forms must be specially noticed, although they are quite regular:—

a. The *i* after *y* in the 1st Pers. Plur. of the *Imperfect* and of the *Pres. Subj.* of Verbs in *ayer, oyer, uyer:*

nous essuy-ions	we wiped off
que nous employ-ions	that we may employ

b. The *i* after *i* in the 1st Pers. Plur. of the *Imperfect* and of the *Pres. Subj.:*

nous cri-ions	we cried
que n. étudi-ions	that we may study

[1] Except those in *guer: narguer, nous narguions.*

c. The two *é fermés* in the Past Part. of Verbs in *éer*, *agré-er:*

Infin. *agré-er;* Past Part. *agré-é;* Fem. *agré-ée.*
Infin. *cré-er;* Past Part. *cré-é;* Fem. *cré-te.*

SECOND CONJUGATION.

65.—**Haïr**, *to hate*, is written without the diæresis (and pronounced accordingly) in the *Sing.* of the *Pres. Ind.* and in the 2nd person of the *Imperative: je hais, tu hais, il hait; hais;* but *haïssons, haïssez, haïssent, haïssais*, &c.; *haïssant;* there is no Pret. Def.

66.—**Bénir**[1] has in the Past Part., besides its regular form, *béni*, Fem. *bénie* (*blessed*), another *bénit*, Fem. *bénite*, in the sense of *consecrated* (*de l'eau bénite*).

67.—**Fleurir** has a second form in the *Imperf.* and in the *Pres. Part.: florissais*, &c.; *florissant*, when it is used in a *figurative* sense: *to prosper, to flourish.*

68.—**Férir** is used only in the phrase *sans coup férir*, without striking a blow.

THIRD CONJUGATION.

69.—**Battre**, *to beat*,[2] has only one *t* in all forms where there is only one syllable: *je bats, tu bats, il bat;* but: *nous battons.*

70.—**Rompre**,[3] *to break*, has *rompt* in the 3rd Pers. Sing. of the Pres. Indic.

F. Verbs used interrogatively and negatively.

71.—(1) *Interrogatively.* The Personal Pronoun, used as the *Subject*, is placed *after* the Verb (in compound

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 282.
[2] See *Reasons*, &c., § 311.
[3] See *Reasons*, &c., § 299 (*d*).

tenses after the Auxiliary), and connected with it by a hyphen.

When the 3rd Pers. Sing. ends in a vowel, a *t* is inserted between the Verb and the Pronoun[1] (*a-t-il; aura-t-il; donne-t-il?*

When the 1st Pers. Sing. of the Pres. Ind. ends in *e* mute, this *e* takes the acute accent, and is pronounced accordingly: *je donne;* but: *donné-je?*

Neither in interrogative nor in negative sentences is the English *do, does, did,* &c., ever expressed.

72.—

Ai-je	*have I*	ai-je eu	*have I had*
as-tu	*hast thou*	as-tu eu	*hast thou had*
a-t-il	*has he*	a-t-il eu	*has he had*
avons-nous	*have we*	avons-nous eu	*have we had*
avez-vous	*have you*	avez-vous eu	*have you had*
ont-ils	*have they*	ont-ils eu	*have they had*
Suis-je	*am I*	ai-je été	*have I been*
es-tu	*art thou*	as-tu été	*hast thou been*
est-il	*is he*	a-t-il été	*has he been*
sommes-nous	*are we*	avons-nous été	*have we been*
êtes-vous	*are you*	avez-vous été	*have you been*
sont-ils	*are they*	ont-ils été	*have they been*

Thus, in the other tenses: *eus-je,* had I; *eus-je eu,* had I had; *aurai-je,* shall I have; *aurai-je eu,* shall I have had, &c.:—

donné-je	*do I give*	donnai-je	*did I give*
donnes-tu	*dost thou give*	donnas-tu	*didst thou give*
donne-t-il	*does he give*	donna-t-il	*did he give*
donnons-nous	*do we give*	donnâmes-nous	*did we give*
donnez-vous	*do you give*	donnâtes-vous	*did you give*
donnent-ils	*do they give*	donnèrent-ils	*did they give*

[1] See *Reasons,* &c. § 299.

Similarly : *ai-je donné*, have I given ; *donnerai-je*, shall I give ; *aurai-je donné*, shall I have given, &c.

73.—If the *subject* of a Verb be a *noun*, the noun comes first, then the Verb (and in compound tenses the Auxiliary) with the pronoun corresponding to the subject :—

L'enfant crie-t-il ?	*Does the child cry ?*
Les soldats marchent-ils ?	*Do the soldiers march ?*
Cette dame a-t-elle chanté ?	*Has this lady sung ?*

74.—*Periphrastic Interrogation.*[1]—Questions may also be asked by *est-ce que* (literally : *is it that ?*) ; *est-ce que l'enfant finit ? est-ce que cette dame a chanté ?*

75.—(2) *Negatively.* *Ne* is placed immediately after the subject, and *pas*[2] after the Verb (or, in compound tenses, after the Auxiliary) :—

Pres. Ind.		*Pret. Indef.*	
je ne donne pas	*I do not give*	je n'ai pas donné	*I have not given*
tu ne donnes pas	*thou dost not give*	tu n'as pas donné	*thou hast not given*
il ne donne pas &c.	*he does not give*	il n'a pas donné	*he has not given*

Pret. Def.		*Pret. Anter.*	
je ne donnai pas	*I did not give*	je n'eus pas donné	*I had not given*
tu ne donnas pas	*thou didst not give*	tu n'eus pas donné	*thou hadst not given*
il ne donna pas &c. &c.	*he did not give*	il n'eut pas donné &c. &c.	*he had not given*

[1] This mode of interrogation is especially used with verbs of only *one* syllable in the 1st Pers. Sing. of the Pres. Indic., *e.g.* : *Est-ce que je perds ; est-ce que je rends ?*

Except. *Ai-je, dis-je, dois-je, fais je, puis-je, sais-je, suis-je, vais-je, vois-je ?*

[2] The same rule applies to *ne . . . . point, ne . . . . jamais, . . . ne rien, ne . . . . plus.*

76.—Before an Infinitive, *ne . . . . pas*, *ne . . . . plus*, *ne . . . . point*, *ne . . . . jamais*, are generally not separated :—

Il a tort de **ne pas** *écrire ; elle se tut pour* **ne plus** *l'irriter ;* but also : *je regrette de* **n'***avoir* **pas** *écrit.*

77.—When the *Negative no* or *not any* is followed by a *noun*, the noun must be preceded by the preposition *de* :—

Il n'a pas *d'*argent	*He has no money*
Elle n'a pas *de* parents	*She has no parents*
Ils n'ont jamais eu *de* courage	*They never had any courage*

78.—*Interrogatively and Negatively.* We have to form first an interrogation (see §§ 71 and 72), and then place *ne* before the Verb, and *pas*, *point*, &c., after the pronoun :—

Ai-je	*Have I ?*	N'ai-je pas	*Have I not ?*
As-tu-été	*Hast thou been ?*	N'as-tu pas été	*Hast thou not been ?*
Pleure-t-il	*Does he weep ?*	Ne pleure-t-il pas	*Does he not weep ?*
Avons-nous oublié	*Have we forgotten ?*	N'avons-nous pas oublié	*Have we not forgotten ?*

79.—*Periphrastic Interrogation* :—

Est-ce que je n'ai pas ?	*Est-ce que tu n'as pas été ?*
Est-ce qu'il ne vend pas ?	*Est-ce que vous n'aviez pas fait ?*

80.— *G. Passive Voice.*

Être loué, *to be praised.*

PRESENT.

Indicative.	Subjunctive.
I am praised.	*That I may be praised.*
je suis loué[1]	que je sois loué
tu es loué	que tu sois loué
il est loué	qu' il soit loué
n. sommes loués	que n. soyons loués
v. êtes loués	que v. soyez loués
ils sont loués	qu' ils soient loués

PRETER. DEFIN.

I was praised.	*That I might be praised.*
je fus loué	que je fusse loué
tu fus loué	que tu fusses loué
il fut loué	qu 'il fût loué
n. fûmes loués, &c.	que n. fussions loués, &c.

PRETER. INDEF.

I have been praised.	*That I may have been praised.*
j' ai été loué	que j' aie été loué
tu as été loué	que tu aies été loué
il a été loué	qu' il ait été loué
n. avons été loués, &c.	que n. ayons été loués, &c.

PRETER. ANTER.

I had been praised.	*That I might have been praised.*
j' eus été loué	que j' eusse été loué
tu eus été loué	que tu eusses été loué
il eut été loué	qu' il eût été loué
n. eûmes été loués, &c.	que n. eussions été loués, &c.

[1] All Past Participles conjugated with *être* agree in *number* and *gender* with the subject of the sentence; thus: *tu es louée.* If the person addressed be a *lady; elle est louée; elles étaient louées:* she is being praised; tney were praised.

PLUPERFECT.

I had been praised.
j' avais été loué
tu avais été loué
il avait été loué, &c.

FUTURE.

Simple.	Perfect.
I shall be praised.	*I shall have been praised.*
je serai loué	j' aurai été loué
tu seras loué	tu auras été loué
il sera loué	il aura été loué
n. serons loués	n. aurons été loués
v. serez loués, &c.	v. aurez été loués, &c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.	Past.
I should be praised.	*I should have been praised.*
je serais loué	j' aurais été loué
tu serais loué	tu aurais été loué
il serait loué	il aurait été loué
n. serions loués	n. aurions été loués
v. serez loués, &c.	v. auriez été loués, &c.

Imperfect.	Imperative.
I was praised.	*Be praised.*
j' étais loué	sois loué
tu étais loué	qu'il soit loué
il était loué	soyons loués
n. étions loués	soyez loués
v. étiez loués, &c.	qu'ils soient loués

INFINITIVE.

Present.	Past.
être loué *to be praised*	avoir été loué *to have been praised*

PARTICIPLE.

Present.		Past.	
étant loué	*being praised*	ayant été loué	*having been praised*

H. Reflective Verbs.

81.—The Reflective Verbs are conjugated with *être* in their Compound Tenses, whilst in English, *to have* is used—

A. Affirmatively:

PRESENT.

Indicative.	Subjunctive.
I deceive myself.	*That I may deceive myself.*
je me trompe	que je me trompe
tu te trompes	que tu te trompes
il se trompe	qu' il se trompe
n. nous trompons	que n. nous trompions
v. vous trompez	que v. vous trompiez
ils se trompent	qu' ils se trompent

PRETER. DEFIN.

I deceived myself.	*That I might deceive myself.*
je me trompai	que je me trompasse
tu te trompas	que tu te trompasses
il se trompa	qu' il se trompât
n. nous trompâmes	que n. nous trompassions
v. vous trompâtes	que v. vous trompassiez
ils se trompèrent	qu' ils se trompassent

Imperfect.	Imperative.
I was deceiving myself.	*Deceive thyself.*
je me trompais	—
tu te trompais	trompe-toi
il se trompait	qu'il se trompe
n. nous trompions	trompons-nous
v. vous trompiez	trompez-vous
ils se trompaient	qu'ils se trompent

Future.	Conditional.
I shall deceive myself.	*I should deceive myself.*
je me tromperai	je me tromperais
tu te tromperas, &c.	tu te tromperais, &c.

PRETER. INDEF.

Indicative.	Subjunctive.
I have deceived myself.	*That I may have deceived myself.*
je me suis trompé	que je me sois trompé
tu t' es trompé	que tu te sois trompé
il s' est trompé	qu' il se soit trompé
n. nous sommes trompés	que n. nous soyons trompés
v. vous êtes trompés	que v. vous soyez trompés
ils se sont trompés	qu' ils se soient trompés

PRETER. ANTER.

Indicative.	Subjunctive.
I had deceived myself.	*That I might have deceived myself.*
je me fus trompé	que je me fusse trompé
tu te fus trompé	que tu te fusses trompé
il se fut trompé, &c.	qu' il se fût trompé, &c.

PLUPERFECT.

je m'étais trompé	*I had deceived myself.*
tu t' étais trompé	*Thou hadst deceived thyself.*
il s' était trompé	*He had deceived himself.*

Future Anter.	Condit. Part.
I shall have deceived myself.	*I should have deceived myself.*
je me serai trompé	je me serais trompé
tu te seras trompé, &c.	tu te serais trompé, &c.

INFINITIVE.

Present.		Past.	
se tromper	*to deceive one self.*	s'être trompé	*to have deceived one self.*

PARTICIPLE.

Present.		Past.	
se trompant	*deceiving one self.*	s'étant trompé	*having deceived one self.*

B. Negatively:

Pres. Ind.	Pret. Def. Ind.
I do not deceive myself.	*I did not deceive myself.*
je ne me trompe pas	je ne me trompai pas
tu ne te trompes pas, &c.	tu ne te trompas pas, &c.

Pret. Indef.	Pluperfect.
I have not deceived myself.	*I had not deceived myself.*
je ne me suis pas trompé	je ne m'étais pas trompé
tu ne t' es pas trompé	tu ne t'étais pas trompé
il ne s'est pas trompé	il ne s'était pas trompé
n. ne nous sommes pas trompés	n. ne nous étions pas trompés
v. ne vous êtes pas trompés	v. ne vous étiez pas trompés
ils ne se sont pas trompés	ils ne s'étaient pas trompés

Future Anter.	Condit. Part.
I shall not have deceived myself	*I should not have deceived myself.*
je ne me serai pas trompé	je ne me serais pas trompé
tu ne te seras pas trompé, &c.	tu ne te serais pas trompé, &c.

C. Interrogatively :

Pres. Ind.	Pret. Def. Ind.
Do I deceive myself?	*Did I deceive myself?*
me trompé-je ?	me trompai-je ?
te trompes-tu ?	te trompas-tu ?
se trompe-t-il ?	se trompa-t-il ?
nous trompons-nous ?	nous trompâmes-nous ?
vous trompez-vous ?	vous trompâtes-vous ?
se trompent-ils ?	se trompèrent-ils ?

Pret. Indef. Ind.	Pluperfect.
Have I deceived myself?	*Did I deceive myself?*
me suis-je trompé ?	m' étais-je trompé ?
t'es-tu trompé ?	t' étais-tu trompé ?
s' est-il trompé ?	s' était-il trompé ?
nous sommes-nous trompés ?	nous étions-nous trompés ?
vous êtes-vous trompés ?	vous étiez-vous trompés ?
se sont-ils trompés ?	s' étaient-ils trompés ?

D. Negatively and Interrogatively :

Pres. Ind.	Pret. Def. Ind.
Do I not deceive myself?	*Did I not deceive myself?*
ne me trompé-je pas ?	ne me trompai-je pas ?
ne te trompes-tu pas ?	ne te trompas-tu pas ?
ne se trompe-t-il pas ?	ne se trompa-t-il pas ?
ne nous trompons-nous pas ?	ne nous trompâmes-nous pas ?
ne vous trompez-vous pas ?	ne vous trompâtes-vous pas ?
ne se trompent-ils pas ?	ne se trompèrent-ils pas ?

Pret. Indef. Ind.	Pluperfect.
Have I not deceived myself?	*Had I not deceived myself?*
ne me suis-je pas trompé ?	ne m'étais-je pas trompé ?
ne t'es-tu pas trompé ?	ne t'étais-tu pas trompé ?
ne s'est-il pas trompé ?	ne s'était-il pas trompé ?
ne nous sommes-nous pas trompés ?	ne nous étions-nous pas trompés ?
ne vous êtes-vous pas trompés ?	ne vous étiez-vous pas trompés ?
ne se sont-ils pas trompés ?	ne s'étaient-ils pas trompes ?

And so on in the other tenses.

82.—*Obs.* A certain number of verbs are reflective in French, whilst they are not so in English; the following are the more important ones:—

s'apercevoir	*to perceive*
s'arrêter	*to stop*
s'attendre à	*to expect*
se baigner	*to bathe*
se défier	*to distrust*
se douter de	*to suspect*
s'échapper	*to escape*
s'écouler	*to pass away*
s'écrier	*to exclaim*
s'écrouler	*to fall down*
s'en aller	*to leave*
s'endormir	*to fall asleep*
s'enfuir	*to run away*
s'ennuyer	*to be weary*
s'ensuivre	*to follow*
s'envoler	*to fly away*
s'épouvanter	*to frighten*
s'éteindre	*to extinguish*
s'évanouir	*to faint*
s'éveiller	*to awake*
se faner	*to wither*
se fier	*to trust*
s'impatienter	*to become impatient*
se lasser de	*to get tired*
se lever	*to rise*
se méfier	*to distrust*
se moquer	*to laugh at*
s'opiniâtrer	*to remain obstinate*
se passer	*to happen*
se passer de	*to dispense with*
se plaindre	*to complain*
se promener	*to walk about*
se raviser	*to alter one's mind*
se repentir	*to repent*
se reposer	*to repose*
se réveiller	*to awake*
se taire	*to be silent*

I. Reciprocal Verbs.

83.—From the *Reflective* Verbs we have to distinguish the *Reciprocal* Verbs, which express that two or more subjects act not on themselves, but each on the other, e.g. *ils s'entre-aident, they help each other.*

. Intransitive Verbs.

84.—This class of Verbs are generally conjugated with *avoir* in their compound tenses.

85.—As an exception to this rule, we have to notice the following, which all mark a *movement* or a *transition from one state into another;* they take *être:*—

aller	*to go*	monter	*to ascend*
arriver	*to arrive*	mourir	*to die*
décéder	*to die*	naître	*to be born*
déchoir	*to decay*	partir	*to set out*
descendre	*to descend*	retourner	*to return*
échoir	*to become due*	sortir	*to go out*
éclore	*to be hatched*	tomber	*to fall*
entrer	*to enter*	venir	*to come*

Il *est* mort	*He* has *died*
Elle *était* déjà partie	*She* had *already left*
Nous *sommes* arrivés	*We* have *arrived*
Pourquoi n'y *êtes* - vous pas encore allés?	*Why* have *you not yet gone there?*

86.—The Compounds of these Verbs—*devenir*, *parvenir*, *repartir*, &c., must also be conjugated with *être*, except **contravenir**, *to contravene*, and **subvenir à**, *to relieve: il* **a** *subvenu à son ami, he has relieved his friend.*

87.—When **convenir** means *to suit*, it is conjugated with *avoir*; when it means *to agree*, it takes *être*.

88.—Some of the Verbs named in § 85 may be used transitively, *i.e.* they may be followed by a direct object, and in this case they are conjugated with *avoir*:—

Il *est* monté	*He has gone upstairs*
Il *a* monté l'horloge	*He has wound up the clock*
Elle *est* sortie	*She has gone out*
Il *a* sorti tous ses habits	*He has taken out all his clothes*

89.—The following Intransitive Verbs are conjugated with *avoir* when the *action* is to be expressed, and with *être* when the *result of the action—i.e.* the actual *state* or *condition*—is to be marked:—

aborder	*to land*	décroître	*to decrease*
accourir	*to run*	dégénérer	*to degenerate*
accroître	*to increase*	demeurer	*to remain*
apparaître	*to appear*	descendre	*to descend*
baisser	*to sink*	disparaître	*to disappear*
cesser	*to cease*	échapper	*to escape*
changer	*to change*	échouer	*to fail, founder*
coucher	*to lie down*	embellir	*to embellish*
croître	*to grow*	empirer	*to grow worse*
déborder	*to overflow*	grandir	*to grow*

monter	*to go up, ascend*	remonter	*to go up again*
passer	*to pass*	rester	*to remain*
rajeunir	*to grow young again*	vieillir	*to grow old*

La rivière *a* débordé hier à dix heures	*The river* overflowed *yesterday at ten o'clock*
Vous ne pouvez passer; ne voyez-vous pas que la rivière *est* débordée	*You cannot pass; don't you see that the river* has overflowed?
Elle *a* bien changé pendant son séjour à Paris	*She* has altered *much during her stay in Paris*
En la revoyant, il me semblait qu'elle *était* tout-à-fait changée	*In seeing her again, it seemed to me that she* was *completely* changed

90.—*Rester* and *demeurer* = *to remain*, when conjugated with *être*.
Ditto = *to live* ditto *avoir*.

Ils *sont* restés plus de trois heures	*They* have *remained more than three hours*
Ils *ont* demeuré longtemps à Rome	*They* have *lived for a long time at Rome*

91.—When *expirer* means *to die*, it always takes *avoir*; when it is used in the sense of *to expire* (speaking of things) it takes *avoir* or *être* according to Rule 89:—

Le terme *a* expiré hier	*The term* expired *yesterday*
Le bail *est* expiré depuis longtemps	*The lease has* been out *for a long time*

92.—**Échapper**, *to escape*:—

Ce mot m'*est* échappé	*This word slipped from me*
Ce mot m'*a* échappé	*I did not hear that word.*

L. Impersonal Verbs.

93.—*Impersonal* or *Uni-personal* Verbs are used only in the 3rd Pers. Sing. of their various tenses. Of frequent occurrence are the following:—

il arrive	*it happens*
il convient	*it becomes*
il éclaire	*it lightens*
il s'ensuit	*it follows*
il faut	*it is necessary*
il gèle	*it freezes*
il y a / il est	*there is, are*
il sied	*it is becoming*
il dégèle	*it thaws*
il grêle	*it hails*
il importe	*it matters*
il neige	*it snows*
il paraît	*it appears*
il pleut	*it rains*
il tonne	*it thunders*
il semble	*it seems*

94.—Uni-personal Verbs ending in *e* mute are conjugated like *parler* (see above, § 38); for *il convient*, *il sied*, *il s'ensuit*, *il faut*, *il paraît*, *il pleut*, see *venir* (§ 116), *asseoir* (§ 114), *suivre* (§ 110), *falloir* (§ 140), *paraître* (§ 120), *pleuvoir* (§ 141).

95.—Some tenses of *il y a*:—

A. Affirmatively:

il y a	*there is*, or *are*
il y eut / il y avait	*there was*, or *were*
il y aura	*there will be*
il y aurait	*there would be*
il y a eu	*there has*, or *have been*
il y eut eu &c. &c.	*there had been*

B. Negatively:

il n'y a pas	*there is (are) not*
il n'y eut pas / il n'y avait pas	*there was (were) not*
il n'y aura pas	*there will not be*
il n'y aurait pas	*there would not be*
il n'y a pas eu	*there has not been*
il n'y eut pas eu	*there had not been*

C. Interrogatively:

y a-t-il?	*is (are) there?*
y eut-il?	*was (were) there?*
y avait-il?	*was (were) there?*
y aura-t-il?	*will there be?*
y aurait-il?	*would there be?*
y a-t-il eu?	*has (have) there been?*
y eut-il eu? &c.	*had there been?*

D. Interrogatively and Negatively:

n'y a-t-il pas?	*is (are) there not?*
n'y eut-il pas?	*was (were) there not?*
n'y avait il pas?	*was (were) there not?*
n'y aura-t-il pas?	*will there not be?*
n'y aurait-il pas?	*would there not be?*
n'y a-t-il pas eu?	*has (have) there not been?*
n'y eut-il pas eu?	*had there not been?*

II. Strong or so-called Irregular Verbs.[1]

96.—*Preliminary Remark.* For the Strong Verbs, notice the following deviations from the Rules given on the Derivation of the Tenses (see § 36).

(1) Exceptions to the Rule *that the Future and Conditional are formed by adding to the Infinitive* ai *and* ais *respectively* :—[2]

acquér-ir	*acquerr-ai, ais*	to acquire
all-er	*ir-ai, ais*	to go
s'asse-oir	*assiér-ai, ais*	to sit down
cour-ir	*courr-ai, ais*	to run
cueill-ir	*cueiller-ai, ais*	to gather
déch-oir	*décherr-ai, ais*	to decline
dev-oir	*devr-ai, ais*	to owe
éch-oir	*écherr-a, ait*	to expire
fai-re	*fer-ai, ais*	to do
fall-oir	*faudr-a, ait*	to be necessary
mourr-ir	*mourr-ai, ais*	to die
pouv-oir	*pourr-ai, ais*	to be able
recev-oir	*recevr-ai, ais*	to receive
sav-oir	*saur-ai, ais*	to know
sé-oir	*siér-a, ait*	to become
ten-ir	*tiendr-ai, ais*	to hold
ven-ir	*viendr-ai, ais*	to come
val-oir	*vaudr-ai, ais*	to be worth
v-oir	*verr-ai, ais*	to see
voul-oir	*voudr-ai, ais*	to desire

(2) Exceptions to the Rule *that the 1st, 2nd, and 3rd Pers. Plur. of the Pres. Indic. are formed from the Pres. Part.* :—

Infin.	*Pres. Part.*	*Present Indicative.*		
		1st Pers.	2nd Pers.	3rd Pers.
av-oir	*ay-ant*	*avons*	*avez*	*ont*
déch-oir	—	*déchoyons*	*déchoyez*	*déchoient*

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 319.

[2] See *Reasons*, &c., § 313.

di-re	*dis-ant*	—	*dites*[1]	—
êt-re	*ét-ant*	*sommes*	*êtes*	*sont*
fai-re	*fais-ant*	—	*faites*[1]	*font*
redi-re	*redis-ant*	—	*redites*	—
sav-oir	*sach-ant*	*savons*	*savez*	*savent*

(3) Exceptions to the Rule *that the 1st. Pers. Sing. of the Pres. Subj. is formed from the 3rd Pers. Plur. of the Pres. Ind.* :—

all-er	*vont*[2]	*q. j'aille*
fai-re	*font*	*q. je fasse*
pouv-oir	*peuvent*	*q. je puisse*
sav-oir	*savent*	*q. je sache*
val-oir	*valent*	*q. je vaille*
voul-oir	*veulent*	*q. je veuille*

General Rule for the derivation of the 1st and 2nd Pers. Plur. of the Pres. Subj. of the Strong Verbs: *these two Persons are derived from the 1st and 2nd Pers. Plur. of the Pres. Indic. by changing* -ons *and* -ez *into* -ions *and* -iez. Four Verbs only are exceptions to this rule :—

Infin.	*Pres. Ind.*	*Pres. Subj.*
di-re	*disons*	—
	dites	*disiez*
fai-re	*faisons*	*fassions*
	faites	*fassiez*
pouv-oir	*pouvons*	*puissions*
	pouvez	*puissiez*
sav-oir	*savons*	*sachions*
	savez	*sachiez*

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 305, and note to § 307.
[2] See *Reasons*, &c., § 318.

97.—*a. Verbs in* er : (1) Aller,[1] *to go.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
Infinitive.	1. Future.	2. Conditional.
all-*er*	j' ir-*ai*[2]	j' ir-*ais*
	tu ir-*as*	tu ir-*ais*
	il ir-*a*	il ir-*ait*
	n. ir-*ons*	n. ir-*ions*
	v. ir-*ez*	v. ir-*iez*
	ils ir-*ont*	ils ir-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind.	1. Pres. Subj.	2. Imperative.
je vai-*s*	que j' aill-*e*	—
tu va-*s*	que tu aill-*es*	va
il va-	qu' il aill-*e*	qu'il aill-*e*
n. all-*ons*	que n. all-*ions*	all-*ons*
v. all-*ez*	que v. all-*iez*	all-*ez*
ils v-*ont*[3]	qu' ils aill-*ent*	qu'ils aill-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind.	1. Pret. Def. Subj.	
j' all-*ai*	que j' all-*asse*	
tu all-*as*	que tu all-*asses*	
il all-*a*	qu' il all-*ât*	
n. ali-*âmes*	que n. all-*assions*	
v. all-*âtes*	que v. all-*assiez*	
ils all-*èrent*	qu' ils all-*assent*	
V. Pres. Part.	1. Imperfect.	2. Pres. Ind.
all-*ant*	j' all-*ais*	—
	tu all-*ais*	—
	il all-*ait*	—
	n. all-*ions*	all-*ons*
	v. all-*iez*	all-*ez*
	ils all-*aient*	—
V. Past Part.	1. Comp. Tenses.	
all-*é, ée*	je suis all-*é, ée*	

Note.—Followed by *en* or *y*, the Imperative *va* takes an *s*. vas-y, *go there.*

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 318. [2] See *ibid.*, § 303. [3] See *ibid.*, § 306.

98.—(2) S'en aller, *to go away.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. s'en all-*er*	1. Future. je m'en ir-*ai* tu t' en ir-*as* il s' en ir-*a* n. n. en ir-*ons* v. v. en ir-*ez* ils s' en ir-*ont*	2. Conditional. je m'en ir-*ais* tu t' en ir-*ais* il s' en ir-*ait* n. n. en ir-*ions* v. v. en ir-*iez* ils s' en ir-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je m'en vai-*s* tu t' en va-*s* il s' en va- n. n. en all-*ons* v. v. en all-*ez* ils s' en v-*ont*	1. Pres. Subj. que je m'en aill-*e* que tu t' en aill-*es* qu' il s' en aill-*e* que n. n. en all-*ions* que v. v. en all-*iez* qu' ils s' en aill-*ent*	2. Imperative. — va qu'il s'en aill-*e* all*ons*-nous-en all*ez*-vous-en qu'ils s'en aill-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je m'en all-*ai* tu t' en all-*as* il s' en all-*a* n. n. en all-*âmes* v. v. en all-*âtes* ils s' en all-*èrent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je m'en all-*asse* que tu t' en all-*asses* qu' il s' en all-*ât* que n. n. en all-*assions* que v. v. en all-*assiez* qu' ils s' en all-*assent*	
IV. Pres. Part. s'en all-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je m'en all-*ais* tu t' en all-*ais* il s' en all-*ait* n. n. en all-*ions* v. v. en all-*iez* ils s' en all-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. — — — n. n. en all-*ons* v. v. en all-*ez* —
V. Past Part.	1. Comp. Tenses. je m'en suis all-*é, ée*	

99.—As the conjugation of this Verb presents some difficulty to the learner, the following tenses may find a place here :—

A. Affirmatively:

Pret. Indef. Ind.

I have gone away.
je m' en suis allé
tu t'en es allé
il s'en est allé
n. nous en sommes allés
v. vous en êtes allés
ils s'en sont allés

Pret. Ind. Subj.

That I may have gone away.
que je m'en sois allé
que tu t'en soies allé
qu' il s'en soit allé
que n. nous en soyons allés
que v. vous en soyez allés
qu' ils s'en soient allés

Imperfect.

I had gone away.
je m'en étais allé
tu t'en étais allé
il s'en était allé
n. nous en étions allés
v. vous en étiez allés
ils s'en étaient allés

Future.

I shall have gone away.
je m'en serai allé
tu t'en seras allé
il s'en sera allé
n. nous en serons allés
v. vous en serez allés
ils s'en seront allés

B. Negatively:

Pres. Indic.

I do not go away.
je ne m'en vais pas
tu ne t'en vas pas
il ne s'en va pas, &c.

Pret. Def. Ind.

I did not go away.
je ne m'en allai pas
tu ne t'en allas pas
il ne s'en alla pas, &c.

Pret. Indef.

I have not gone away.
je ne m'en suis pas allé
tu ne t'en es pas allé
il ne s'en est pas allé
n. ne nous en sommes pas allé
v. ne vous en êtes pas allé
ils ne s'en sont pas allé

Pluperfect.

I had not gone away.
je ne m'en étais pas allé
tu ne t'en étais pas allé
il ne s'en était pas allé
n. ne nous en étions pas allés
v. ne vous en étiez pas allés
ils ne s'en étaient pas allés

Future Anter.

I shall not have gone away.
je ne m'en serai pas allé
tu ne t' en seras pas allé
&c. &c.

Condit. Past.

I should not have gone away.
je ne m'en serais pas allé
tu ne t' en serais pas allé
&c. &c.

C. Interrogatively:

Pres. Indic.	Pret. Def. Ind.
Do I go away?	*Did I go away?*
m'en vais-je?	m'en allai-je?
t' en vas-tu?	t' en allas-tu?
s' en va-t-il?	s' en alla-t-il?
n. en allons-nous?	n. en allâmes-nous?
v. en allez-vous?	v. en allâtes-vous?
s' en vont-ils?	s' en allèrent-ils?

Pret. Indef. Ind.	Pluperfect.
Have I gone away?	*Had I gone away?*
m'en suis-je allé?	m'en étais-je allé?
t' en es-tu allé?	t' en étais-tu allé?
s' en est-il allé?	s' en était-il allé?
n. en sommes-nous allés?	n. en étions-nous allés?
v. en êtes-vous allés?	v. en étiez-vous allés?
s' en sont-ils allés?	s' en étaient-ils allés?

D. Negatively and Interrogatively:

Pres. Ind.	Pret. Def. Indic.
Do I not go away?	*Did I not go away?*
ne m'en vais-je pas?	ne m'en allai-je pas?
ne t' en vas-tu pas?	ne t' en allas-tu pas?
ne s' en va-t-il pas?	ne s' en alla-t-il pas?
ne n. en allons-nous pas?	ne n. en allâmes-nous pas?
ne v. en allez-vous pas?	ne v. en allâtes-vous pas?
ne s' en vont-ils pas?	ne s' en allèrent-ils pas?

Pret. Indef. Ind.	Pluperfect.
Have I not gone away?	*Had I not gone away?*
ne m'en suis-je pas allé?	ne m'en étais-je pas allé?
ne t' en es-tu pas allé?	ne t' en étais-tu pas allé?
ne s' en est-il pas allé?	ne s' en était-il pas allé?
ne n. en sommes-nous pas allés?	ne n. en étions-nous pas allés?
ne v. en êtes-vous pas alles?	ne v. en étiez-vous pas allés?
ne s' en sont-ils pas allés?	ne s' en étaient-ils pas allés?

100.—*b. Verbs having* i *in the Preterite Definite.*

aa. Verbs forming the Future regularly.

(1) ***Conduire**, *to lead.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. condui-*re*	1. Future. je condui-r-*ai* tu condui-r-*as*, &c.	2. Conditional. je condui-r-*ais* tu condui-r-*ais*, &c.
II. Pres. Ind. je condui-*s* tu condui-*s* il condui-*t* n. conduis-*ons*, &c.	1. Pres. Subj. que je conduis-*e* que tu conduis-*es* qu' il conduis-*e* que n. conduis-*ions*, &c.	2. Imperative. — condui-*s* qu'il conduis-*e* conduis-*ons*, &c.
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je conduis-*is* tu conduis-*is*, &c.	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je conduis-*isse* que tu conduis-*isses*, &c.	
IV. Pres. Part. conduis-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je conduis-*ais* tu conduis-*ais*, &c.	2. Pres. Ind. *1st, 2nd, & 3rd p. plur.* n. conduis-*ons* v. conduis-*ez* ils conduis-*ent*
V. Past Part. cond-*uit*, *e*	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai cond-*uit*	2. Pass. Voice. je suis cond-*uit*, *e*

Nuire, *to hurt*, is conjugated like *conduire*, but it has in the Past Part. *nui*, of which there is no feminine.

Luire, *to shine*, has also in the Past Part. *lui*; there is no Pret. Def. of this verb.

The following Verbs and their Compounds are in all their tenses conjugated like *conduire*:—

induire	*to induce*	*Compounds of Lat.* ducere	construire	*to construct*	*Compounds of Lat.* struere
introduire	*to introduce*		détruire	*to destroy*	
produire	*to produce*		instruire	*to instruct*	
réduire	*to reduce*		cuire	*to cook* (coquere)	
séduire	*to seduce*				
traduire	*to translate*				

101.—(2) Confire, *to preserve.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. confi-*re*	1. Future. je confi-r-*ai* tu confi-r-*as* il confi-r-*a* n. confi-r-*ons*, &c.	2. Conditional. je confi-r-*ais* tu confi-r-*ais* il confi-r-*ait* n. confi-r-*ions*, &c.
II. Pres. Ind. je confi-*s* tu confi-*s* il confi-*t* n. confis-*ons* v. confis-*ez* ils confis-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je confis-*e* que tu confis-*es* qu' il confis-*e* que n. confis-*ions* que v. confis-*iez* qu' ils confis-*ent*	2. Imperative. — confi-*s* qu'il confis-*e* confis-*ons* confis-*ez* qu'ils confis-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je conf-*is* tu conf-*is* il conf-*it* n. conf-*îmes* v. conf-*îtes* ils conf-*irent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je conf-*isse* que tu conf-*isses* qu' il conf-*ît* que n. conf-*issions* que v. conf-*issiez* qu' ils conf-*issent*	
IV. Pres. Part. confis-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je confis-*ais* tu confis-*ais* il confis-*ait* n. confis-*ions*, &c.	2. Pres. Ind. *1st, 2nd, & 3rd p. plur.* n. confis-*ons* v. confis-*ez* ils confis-*ent*
V. Past Part. conf-*it, e*	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai conf-*it*	2. Pass. Voice. il est conf-*it*

Conjugate in the same manner **suffire,** *to suffice,* with the exception of the Past Part. *suffi,* of which there is no feminine.

102.—(3) *Coudre, *to sew.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. coud-*re*	1. Future. je coud-r-*ai* tu coud-r-*as* il coud-r-*a* n. coud-r-*ons*, &c.	2. Conditional. je coud-r-*ais* tu coud-r-*ais* il coud-r-*ait* n. coud-r-*ions*, &c.
II. Pres. Ind. je coud-*s* tu coud-*s* il coud- n. cous-*ons* [1] v. cous-*ez* ils cous-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je cous-*e* que tu cous-*es* qu' il cous-*e* que n. cous-*ions* que v. cous-*iez* qu' ils cous-*ent*	2. Imperative. — coud-*s* qu'il cous-*e* cous-*ons* [1] cous-*ez* qu'ils cous-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je cous-*is* tu cous-*is*, &c.	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je cous-*isse* que tu cous-*isses*, &c.	
IV. Pres. Part. cous-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je cous-*ais* tu cous-*ais*, &c.	2. Pres. Ind. *1st, 2nd, & 3rd p. plur.* n. cous-*ons* v. cous-*ez* ils cous-*ent*
V. Past Part. cous-*u*, *e*	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai cous-*u*, *e*	2. Pass. Voice. je suis cous-*u*, *e*

N.B.—As a Compound Verb is generally conjugated like the Simple Verb from which it is derived (*découdre* like *coudre*, *accourir* like *courir*, &c.), it will not be found in the list of the Strong Verbs; but whenever it differs in its conjugation from the Simple Verb, this will be pointed out.

[1] On the *s* in cousons, cousez, &c., see *Reasons*, § 317.

103.—(4) *Craindre, *to fear.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. craind-*re*[1]	1. Future. je craind-r-*ai* tu craind-r-*as*, &c.	2. Conditional. je craind-r-*ais* tu craind-r-*ais*, &c.
II. Pres. Ind. je crain-*s* tu crain-*s* il crain-*t* n. craign-*ons*, &c.	1. Pres. Subj. que je craign-*e* que tu craign-*es* qu' il craign-*e* que n. craign-*ions*, &c.	2. Imperative. — crain-*s* qu'il craign-*e* craign-*ons*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je craign-*is* tu craign-*is*, &c.	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je craign-*isse* que tu craign-*isses*, &c.	
IV. Pres. Part. craign-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je craign-*ais* tu craign-*ais*, &c.	2. Pres. Ind. *1st, 2nd, & 3rd p. plur.* n. craign-*ons* v. craign-*ez* ils craign-*ent*
V. Past Part. craint,[2] *e*	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai craint	2. Pass. Voice. je suis craint, *e*

N.B.—Conjugate in the same manner all Verbs in *indre*, as *ceindre, joindre, plaindre*, &c.

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 318 (*c*).

[2] As to the Preterite and the Past Participle of the Strong Verbs (*e.g.* je dis, je dus, je vis; dit, dû, vu, &c.), it is impossible to know from the form these tenses have now, which is the *root* of the Verb and which the *termination;* in O.Fr. it was in many cases still possible to distinguish them from each other.

dí-xi	*dí-s*	déb-ui	*d-ui*
di-xísti	*de-sis* (*de-ís*)	deb-ústi	*de-ús*
dí-xit	*dí-st*	déb-uit	*d-ut*
di-xímus	*de-simes* (*de-îmes*)	deb-úimus	*de-úmes*
di-xístis	*de-sistes* (*de-istes*)	deb-ústis	*de-ústes*
dí-xerunt	*dí-strent* (*dí-rent*)	déb-uerunt	*d-urent*

The Past Participles of *devoir* and *voir* were: *de-ût, de-û, d-t; ve-ût, ve-û, v-u.*

104.—(5) Dire, *to say.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. di-*re*	1. Future. je di-r-*ai* tu di-r-*as*, &c.	2. Conditional. je di-r-*ais* tu di-r-*ais*, &c.
II. Pres. Ind. je di-*s* tu di-*s* il di-*t* n. dis-*ons* v. dit-es [3] ils dis-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je dis-*e* que tu dis-*es* qu' il dis-*e* que n. dis-*ions* que v. dis-*iez* qu' ils dis-*ent*	2. Imperative. — di-*s* qu'il di-*se* dis-*ons* dit-es qu'ils dis-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je dis tu dis il dit n. dîmes v. dîtes ils dirent	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je disse que tu disses qu' il dît que n. dissions que v. dissiez qu' ils dissent	
IV. Pres. Part. dis-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je dis-*ais* tu dis-*ais* il dis-*ait*	2. Pres. Ind. *1st & 3rd p. plur.* n. dis-*ons* ils dis-*ent*
V. Past Part. dit, *e*	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai dit	2. Pass. Voice. je suis dit, *e*

[1] **Redire,** *to say again,* is the only Verb conjugated exactly like *dire;* all the other compounds of *dire* (*contredire, interdire,* &c.) form the 2nd Pers. Plur. in *sez* (*contredisez, interdisez*).

[2] **Maudire,** *to injure,* differs from *dire* in so far as it takes *ss* in the Plur. of the Pres. Indic.: *maudissons, maudissez, maudissent;* in Pres. Subj.: *que je maudisse,* &c.; Pres. Part.: *maudissent;* Imperat. *qu'il maudisse, maudissons, maudissez.*

[3] On *dites,* see *Reasons,* &c., § 305, and note to § 307.

105.—(6) *Écrire, *to write.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. écri-*re*	1. Future. j' écri-r-*ai* tu écri-r-*as*, &c.	2. Conditional. j' écri-r-*ais*, tu écri-r-*ais*, &c.
II. Pres. Ind. j' écri-*s* tu écri-*s* il écri-*t* n. écriv-*ons* [1] v. écriv-*ez* ils écriv-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que j' écriv-*e* que tu écriv-*es* qu' il écriv-*e* que n. écriv-*ions* que v. écriv-*iez* qu' ils écriv-*ent*	2. Imperative. — écri-*s* qu'il écriv-*e* écriv-*ons* écriv-*ez* qu'ils écriv-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. j' écriv-*is* tu écriv-*is* il écriv-*it* n. écriv-*îmes* v. écriv-*îtes* ils écriv-*irent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que j' écriv-*isse* que tu écriv-*isses* qu' il écriv-*ît* que n. écriv-*issions* que v. écriv-*issiez* qu' ils écriv-*issent*	
IV. Pres. Part. écriv-*ant* [1]	1. Imperfect. j'écriv-*ais* tu écriv-*ais* il écriv-*ait* n. écriv-*ions*, &c.	2. Pres. Ind. *1st, 2nd, & 3rd p. plur.* n. écriv-*ons* v. écriv-*ez* ils écriv-*ent*
V. Past Part. écrit, e	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai écrit	2. Pass. Voice. il est écrit

[1] On the *v* in écrivant and écrivons, &c., see *Reasons and Illustrations*, § 318 (C).

106.—(7) Mettre, *to put.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. mett-re	1. Future. je mett-r-*ai* tu mett-r-*as*, &c.	2. Conditional. je mett-r-*ais* tu mett-r-*ais*, &c.
II. Pres. Ind. je met-*s*[1] tu met-*s* il met- n. mett-*ons* v. mett-*ez* ils mett-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je mett-*e* que tu mett-*es* qu' il mett-*e* que n. mett-*ions* que v. mett-*iez* qu' ils mett-*ent*	2. Imperative. — met-*s* qu'il mett-*e* mett-*ons* mett-*ez* qu'ils mett-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je mis tu mis il mit n. mîmes v. mîtes ils mirent	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je misse que tu misses qu' il mît que n. missions que v. missiez qu' ils missent	
IV. Pres. Part. mett-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je mett-*ais* tu mett-*ais* il mett-*ait* n. mett-*ions*	2. Pres. Ind. *1st, 2nd, & 3rd p. plur.* n. mett-*ons* v. mett-*ez* ils mett-*ent*
V. Past Part. mis, e	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai mis	2. Pass. Voice. je suis mis, e

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 315.

107.—(8) *Naître, *to be born.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. naît-*re*[1]	1. Future. je naît-r-*ai* tu naît-r-*as* il naît-r-*a* n. naît-r-*ons* v. naît-r-*ez* ils naît-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. je naît-r-*ais* tu naît-r-*ais* il naît-r-*ait* n. naît-r-*ions* v. naît-r-*iez* ils naît-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je nai-*s* tu nai-*s* il naî-*t* n. naiss-*ons* v. naiss-*ez* ils naiss-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je naiss-*e* que tu naiss-*es* qu' il naiss-*e* que n. naiss-*ions* que v. naiss-*iez* qu' ils naiss-*ent*	2. Imperative. — nai-*s* qu'il naiss-*e* naiss-*ons*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je naqu-*is*[2] tu naqu-*is* il naqu-*it* n. naqu-*îmes*, &c.	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je naqu-*isse* que tu naqu-*isses* qu' il naqu-*ît* q. n. naqu-*issions*, &c.	
IV. Pres. Part. naiss-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je naiss-*ais*, &c.	2. Pres. Ind. *1st, 2nd, & 3rd p. plur.* n. naiss-*ons*, &c.
V. Past Part. né, e	1. Comp. Tenses. je suis né, e	

N.B.—Renaître, *to be born again*, has neither a Pret. Def. nor a Past Part., and consequently no compound tenses.

[1] See *Reasons and Illustrations*, § 318 (*C*).
[2] See *ibid.*, § 323 (*B*) (note to *vivre*).

108.—(9) Prendre, *to take.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. prend-*re*	1. Future. je prend-r-*ai* tu prend-r-*as* il prend-r-*a* n. prend-r-*ons* v. prend-r-*ez* ils prend-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. je prend-r-*ais* tu prend-r-*ais* il prend-r-*ait* n. prend-r-*ions* v. prend-r-*iez* ils prend-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je prend-*s* tu prend-*s* il prend- n. pren-*ons* v. pren-*ez* ils prenn-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je prenn-*e* que tu prenn-*es* qu' il prenn-*e* que n. pren-*ions* que v. pren-*iez* qu' ils prenn-*ent*	2. Imperative. — prend-*s* qu'il prenn-*e* pren-*ons* pren-*ez* qu'ils prenn-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je pris tu pris il prit n. prîmes v. prîtes ils prirent	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je prisse que tu prisses qu' il prît que n. prissions que v. prissiez qu' ils prissent	
IV. Pres. Part. pren-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je pren-*ais* tu pren-*ais* il pren-*ait* n. pren-*ions* v. pren-*iez* ils pren-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. *1st & 2nd p. plur.* n. pren-*ons* v. pren-*ez*
V. Past Part. pris, e	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai pris	2. Pass. Voice. je suis pris, e

109.—(10) Rire, *to laugh.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. ri-*re*[1]	1. Future. je ri-r-*ai* tu ri-r-*as*, &c.	2. Conditional. je ri-r-*ais* tu ri-r-*ais*, &c.
II. Pres. Ind. je ri-*s* tu ri-*s* il ri-*t* n. ri-*ons* v. ri-*ez* ils ri-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je ri-*e* que tu ri-*es* qu' il ri-*e* que n. ri-*ions* que v. ri-*iez* qu' ils ri-*ent*	2. Imperative. — ri-*s* qu'il ri-*e* ri-*ons* ri-*ez* qu' ils ri-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je ris tu ris il rit n. rîmes v. rîtes ils rirent	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je risse que tu risses qu' il rît que n. rissions que v. rissiez qu' ils rissent	
IV. Pres. Part. ri-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je ri-*ais* tu ri-*ais* il ri-*ait* n. ri-*ions*, &c.	2. Pres. Ind. *1st, 2nd, & 3rd p. plur.* n. ri-*ons* v. ri-*ez* ils ri-*ent*
V. Past Part. ri	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai ri	

[1] See *Reasons and Illustrations*, § 321

110.—(11) *Suivre, *to follow.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. suiv-*re*	1. Future. je suiv-r-*ai* tu suiv-r-*as* il suiv-r-*a* n. suiv-r-*ons* v. suiv-r-*ez* ils suiv-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. je suiv-r-*ais* tu suiv-r-*ais* il suiv-r-*ait* n. suiv-r-*ions* v. suiv-r-*iez* ils suiv-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je sui-*s* tu sui-*s* il sui-*t* n. suiv-*ons* v. suiv-*ez* ils suiv-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je suiv-*e* que tu suiv-*es* qu' il suiv-*e* que n. suiv-*ions* que v. suiv-*iez* qu' ils suiv-*ent*	2. Imperative. — sui-*s* qu'il suiv-*e* suiv-*ons* suiv-*ez* qu'ils suiv-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je suiv-*is* tu suiv-*is* il suiv-*it* n. suiv-*îmes* v. suiv-*îtes* ils suiv-*irent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je suiv-*isse* que tu suiv-*isses* qu' il suiv-*ît* que n. suiv-*issions* que v. suiv-*issiez* qu' ils suiv-*issent*	
IV. Pres. Part. suiv-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je suiv-*ais* tu suiv-*ais* il suiv-*ait* n. suiv-*ions* v. suiv-*iez* ils suiv-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. *1st, 2nd, & 3rd p. plur.* — — — n. suiv-*ons* v. suiv-*ez* ils suiv-*ent*
V. Past Part. suiv-*i*, -*ie*	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai suiv-*i*	2. Pass. Voice. je suis suiv-*i*, -*ie*

III.—(12) Traire, *to milk.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. trai-*re*	1. Future. je trai-r-*ai* tu trai-r-*as* il trai-r-*a* n. trai-r-*ons*, &c.	2. Conditional. je trai-r-*ais* tu trai-r-*ais* il trai-r-*ait* n. trai-r-*ions*, &c.
II. Pres. Ind. je trai-*s* tu trai-*s* il trai-*t* n. tray-*ons* v. tray-*ez* ils trai-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je trai-*e* que tu trai-*es* qu' il trai-*e* que n. tray-*ions* que v. tray-*iez* qu'ils trai-*ent*	2. Imperative. — trai-*s* qu'il trai-*e* tray-*ons* tray-*ez* qu'ils trai-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. —		
IV. Pres. Part. tray-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je tray-*ais* tu tray-*ais* il tray-*ait* n. tray-*ions* v. tray-*iez* ils tray-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. *1st, 2nd, & 3rd p. plur.* — — — n. tray-*ons* v. tray-*ez* ils trai-*ent*
V. Past Part. trait, *e*	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai trait	2. Pass. Voice. elle est traite

Note.—The original meaning of *traire* from *Lat. trahere* (to draw) is still seen in the following Compound Verbs:—

1. Abstraire, *to abstract;* instead of this verb we generally use *faire abstraction.*
2. Attraire, *to attract;* the verb *attirer* is used in preference to *attraire.*
3. Distraire, *to distract, to separate.*
4. Extraire, *to extract.*
5. Soustraire, *to abstract, take away.*
6. Rentraire, *to fine draw, to darn.*

112.—(13) *Vaincre, *to conquer.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. vainc-*re*	1. Future. je vainc-r-*ai* tu vainc-r-*as* il vainc-r-*a* n. vainc-r-*ons*, &c.	2. Conditional. je vainc-r-*ais* tu vainc-r-*ais* il vainc-r-*ait* n. vainc-r-*ions*, &c.
II. Pres. Ind. je vainc-*s* tu vainc-*s* il vainc- n. vainqu-*ons* v. vainqu-*ez* ils vainqu-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je vainqu-*e* que tu vainqu-*es* qu' il vainqu-*e* que n. vainqu-*ions* que v. vainqu-*iez* qu' ils vainqu-*ent*	2. Imperative. — — qu'il vainqu-*e* vainqu-*ons* vainqu-*ez* qu'ils vainqu-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je vainqu-*is* tu vainqu-*is* il vainqu-*it* n. vainqu-*îmes* v. vainqu-*îtes* ils vainqu-*irent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je vainqu-*isse* que tu vainqu-*isses* qu' il vainqu-*ît* que n. vainqu-*issions* que v. vainqu-*issiez* qu' ils vainqu-*issent*	
IV. Pres. Part. vainqu-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je vainqu-*ais* tu vainqu-*ais* il vainqu-*ait* n. vainqu-*ions* v. vainqu-*iez* ils vainqu-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. 1*st*, 2*nd*, & 3*rd p. plur.* — — — n. vainqu-*ons* v. vainqu-*ez* ils vainqu-ent
V. Past Part. vainc-*u*, *e*	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai vainc-*u*	2. Pass. Voice. je suis vainc-*u*, *e*

Note.—The letter *c* in this Verb is changed into *qu*, whenever it comes to stand before *a*, *e*, *i*, *o*.

bb. Those forming the Future irregularly.

113.—(1) **Acquérir,** *to acquire.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. acquér-*ir*	1. Future. j' **acquer-r-ai** [1] tu acquer-r-*as* il acquer-r-*a* n. acquer-r-*ons* v. acquer-r-*ez* ils acquer-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. j' **acquer-r-ais** tu acquer-r-*ais* il acquer-r-*ait* n. acquer-r-*ions* v. acquer-r-*iez* ils acquer-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. j' acquier-*s* tu acquier-*s* il acquier-*t* n. acquér-*ons* v. acquér-*ez* ils acquièr-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que j' acquièr-*e* que tu acquièr-*es* qu' il acquièr-*e* que n. acquér-*ions* que v. acquér-*iez* qu' ils acquièr-*ent*	2. Imperative. — acquier-*s* qu'il acquièr-*e* acquér-*ons* acquér-*ez* qu'ils acquièr-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. j' acqu-*is* tu acqu-*is* il acqu-*it* n. acqu-*îmes* v. acqu-*îtes* ils acqu-*irent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que j' acqu-*isse* que tu acqu-*isses* qu' il acqu-*ît* que n. acqu-*issions* que v. acqu-*issiez* qu' ils acqu-*issent*	
IV. Pres. Part. acquér-*ant*	1. Imperfect. j' acquér-*ais* tu acquér-*ais* il acquér-*ait* n. acquér-*ions* v. acquér-*iez* ils acquér-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. *1st & 2nd p. plur.* — — — n. acquér-*ons* v. acquér-*ez* —
V. Past Part. acqu-*is, e*	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai acqu-*is*	2. Pass. Voice. je suis acqu-*is, e*

[1] See above, § 96, and *Reasons and Illustrations,* § 313.

114.—(2) S'asseoir, *to seat oneself, to sit down.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. s'asse-*oir*	1. Future. je m'**assié-r-ai**[1] tu t' assié-r-*as* il s' assié-r-*a* n. n. assié-r-*ons*, &c.	2. Conditional. je m'**assié-r-ais** tu t' assié-r-*ais* il s' assié-r-*ait* n. n. assié-r-*ions*, &c.
II. Pres. Ind. je m'assied-*s* tu t' assied-*s* il s' assied- n. n. assey-*ons* v. v. assey-*ez* ils s' assei-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je m'assei-*e* que tu t' assei-*es* qu' il s' assei-*e* que n. n. assey-*ions* que v. v. assey-*iez* qu' ils s' assei-*ent*	2. Imperative. — assieds-*toi* qu'il s'assei-*e* asseyons-*nous* asseyez-*vous* qu'ils s'assei-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je m'ass-*is* tu t' ass-*is* il s' ass-*it* n. n. ass-*îmes* v. v. ass-*îtes* ils s' ass-*irent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je m'ass-*isse* que tu t' ass-*isses* qu' il s' ass-*ît* que n. n. ass-*issions* que v. v. ass-*issiez* qu' ils s' ass-*issent*	
IV. Pres. Part. s'assey-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je m'assey-*ais* tu t' assey-*ais* il s' assey-*ait* n. n. assey-*ions* v. v. assey-*iez* ils s' assey-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. *1st, 2nd, & 3rd p. plur.* — — — n. n. assey-*ons* v. v. assey-*ez* ils s' assei-*ent*
V. Past Part. ass-*is*, *e*	1. Comp. Tenses. je me suis ass-*is*, *e*	

Note.—**Asseoir** is also used as a Transitive Verb: *asseoir quelqu'un*, to put some one down; *asseyez l'enfant.*

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 313, N. iii. *(a)*.

115.—(3) Faire, *to do, to make.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. fai-*re*	1. Future. je fe-r-ai[3] tu fe-r-*as* il fe-r-*a*, &c.	2. Conditional. je fe-r-ais tu fe-r-*ais* il fe-r-*ait*, &c.
II. Pres. Ind. je fai-*s* tu fai-*s* il fai-*t* n. fais-*ons* v. fait-es[1] ils f-*ont*[2]	1. Pres. Subj. que je fass-*e* que tu fass-*es* qu' il fass-*e* que n. fass-*ions* que v. fass-*iez* qu' ils fass-*ent*	2. Imperative. — fai-*s* qu'il fass-*e* fais-*ons* fait-es qu'ils fass-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je f*is* tu f*is* il f*it* n. f*îmes* v. f*îtes* ils f*irent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je f*isse* que tu f*isses* qu' il f*ît* que n. f*issions* que v. f*isssiez* qu' ils f*issent*	
IV. Pres. Part. fais-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je fais-*ais* tu fais-*ais* il fais-*ait* n. fais-*ions* v. fais-*iez* ils fais-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. — — — n. fais-*ons* — —
V. Past Part. fait, *e*	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai fait	2. Pass. Voice. je suis fait, *e*

Note.—Faisant, faisons, faisais, &c., are pronounced *fesant, fesons, fesais.*

[1] See *Reasons and Illustrations*, § 305, and note to § 307.
[2] See *ibid.*, § 306.
[3] See above, § 96, and *Reasons and Illustrations*, § 313, N. ii.

116.—(4) Tenir, *to hold.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. ten-*ir*	1. Future. je tiend-r-ai [1] tu tiend-r-*as*, &c.	2. Conditional. je tiend-r-rais tu tiend-r-*ais*, &c.
II. Pres. Ind. je tien-*s* tu tien-*s* il tien-*t* n. ten-*ons* v. ten-*ez* ils tienn-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je tienn-*e* que tu tienn-*es* qu' il tienn-*e* que n. ten-*ions* que v. ten-*iez* qu' ils tienn-*ent*	2. Imperative. — tien-*s* qu'il tienn-*e* ten-*ons* ten-*ez* qu'ils tienn-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je t*ins* tu t*ins* il t*int* n. t*înmes* v. t*întes* ils t*inrent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je t*insse* que tu t*insses* qu' il t*înt* que n. t*inssions* que v. t*inssiez* qu' ils t*inssent*	
IV. Pres. Part. ten-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je ten-*ais* tu ten-*ais* il ten-*ait* n. ten-*ions* v. ten-*iez*, &c.	2. Pres. Ind. *1st & 2nd p. plur.* — — — n. ten-*ons* v. ten-*ez*
V. Past Part. ten-*u*, *e*	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai ten-*u*	2. Pass. Voice. je suis ten-*u*, *e*

Note.—**Venir** is conjugated exactly like *tenir*, only it takes *être* in its compound tenses: *je suis venu*, I have come. **Prévenir** (*to inform of*) and **subvenir** (*to relieve*) are conjugated with *avoir*; **convenir** takes *être* when it means *to agree*, and *avoir* when it means *to suit*: *nous sommes convenus*, we have agreed; *cela ne lui a pas convenu*, that did not suit him.

[1] See *Reasons and Illustrations*, § 313, N. iv.

117.—(5) Voir, *to see.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. v-*oir*	1. Future. je ver-r-ai[1] tu ver-r-*as*, &c.	2. Conditional. je ver-r-ais tu ver-r-*ais*, &c.
II. Pres. Ind. je voi-*s* tu voi-*s* il voi-*t* n. voy-*ons* v. voy-*ez* ils voi-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je voi-*e* que tu voi-*es* qu' il voi-*e* que n. voy-*ions* que v. voy-*iez* qu' ils voi-*ent*	2. Imperative. — voi-*s* qu'il voi-*e* voy-*ons* voy-*ez* qu'ils voi-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je v*is* tu v*is* il v*it* n. v*îmes* v. v*îtes* ils v*irent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj que je v*isse* que tu v*isses* qu' il v*ît* que n. v*issions* que v. v*issiez* qu' ils v*issent*	
IV. Pres. Part. voy-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je voy-*ais* tu voy-*ais* il voy-*ait* n. voy-*ions* v. voy-*iez* ils voy-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. *1st, 2nd, & 3rd p. plur.* — — — n. voy-*ons* v. voy-*ez* ils voi-*ent*
V. Past Part. vu, *e*	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai vu	2. Pass. Voice. je suis vu, *e*

Note.—Prévoir, *to foresee*, has in the Future and Conditional *prévoirai* and *prévoirais*. Pourvoir forms the Future and Conditional regularly: *pourvoirai* and *pourvoirais;* in the Pret. Def. Ind. and Subj. it has *pourvus*, *pourvusse*. In the other tenses these two Verbs are conjugated like *voir*.

[1] See *Reasons and Illustrations*, § 313, N. iii. (*a*).

c. Verbs having u *in the Pret. Def.*

aa. Those with a regular Future.

118.—(1) Boire, *to drink.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. boi-*re*	1. Future. je boi-r-*ai* tu boi-r-*as* il boi-r-*a* n. boi-r-*ons* v. boi-r-*ez* ils boi-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. je boi-r-*ais* tu boi-r-*ais* il boi-r-*ait* n. boi-r-*ions* v. boi-r-*iez* ils boi-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je boi-*s* tu boi-*s* il boi-*t* n. buv-*ons* v. buv-*ez* ils boiv-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je boiv-*e* que tu boiv-*es* qu' il boiv-*e* que n. buv-*ions* que v. buv-*iez* qu' ils boiv-*ent*	2. Imperative. — boi-*s* qu'il boiv-*e* buv-*ons* buv-*ez* qu'ils boiv-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je b*us* tu b*us* il b*ut* n. b*ûmes* v. b*ûtes* ils b*urent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je b*usse* que tu b*usses* qu' il b*ût* que n. b*ussions* que v. b*ussiez* qu' ils b*ussent*	
IV. Pres. Part. buv-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je buv-*ais* tu buv-*ais* il buv-*ait* n. buv-*ions* v. buv-*iez* ils buv-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. *1st & 2nd p. plur.* — — — n. buv-*ons* v. buv-*ez* —
V. Past Part. bu, *e*	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai bu	2 Pass. Voice. il est bu

119.—(2) Conclure, *to conclude.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. conclu-*re*	1. Future. je conclu-r-*ai* tu conclu-r-*as* il conclu-r-*a* n. conclu-r-*ons* v. conclu-r-*ez* ils conclu-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. je conclu-r-*ais* tu conclu-r-*ais* il conclu-r-*ait* n. conclu-r-*ions* v. conclu-r-*iez* ils conclu-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je conclu-*s* tu conclu-*s* il conclu-*t* n. conclu-*ons* v. conclu-*ez* ils conclu-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je conclu-*e* que tu conclu-*es* qu' il conclu-*e* que n. conclu-*ïons* que v. conclu-*ïez* qu' ils conclu-*ent*	2. Imperfect. — conclu-*s* qu'il conclu-*e* conclu-*ons* conclu-*ez* qu'ils conclu-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je concl-*us* tu concl-*us* il concl-*ut* n. concl-*ûmes* v. concl-*ûtes* ils concl-*urent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je concl-*usse* que tu concl-*usses* qu' il concl-*ût* que n. concl-*ussions* que v. concl-*ussiez* qu' ils concl-*ussent*	
IV. Pres. Part. conclu-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je conclu-*ais* tu conclu-*ais* il conclu-*ait* n. conclu-*ïons* v. conclu-*ïez* ils conclu-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. *1st, 2nd, & 3rd p. plur.* — — — n. conclu-*ons* v. conclu-*ez* ils conclu-*ent*
V. Past Part. concl-*u, e*	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai concl-*u*	2. Pass. Voice. il est concl-*u*

120.—(3) Connaître, *to know*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. connaît-*re*	1. Future. je connaît-r-*ai* tu connaît-r-*as* il connaît-r-*a* n. connaît-r-*ons* v. connaît-r-*ez* ils connaît-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. je connaît-r-*ais* tu connaît-r-*ais* il connaît-r-*ait* n. connaît-r-*ions* v. connaît-r-*iez* ils connaît-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je connai-*s* tu connai-*s* il connaî-*t* n. connaiss-*ons* v. connaiss-*ez* ils connaiss-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je connaiss-*e* que tu connaiss-*es* qu' il connaiss-*e* que n. connaiss-*ions* que v. connaiss-*iez* qu' ils connaiss-*ent*	2. Imperative. — connai-*s* qu'il connaiss-*e* connaiss-*ons* connaiss-*ez* qu'ils connaiss-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je conn-*us* tu conn-*us* il conn-*ut* n. conn-*ûmes* v. conn-*ûtes* ils conn-*urent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je conn-*usse* que tu conn-*usses* qu' il conn-*ût* que n. conn-*ussions* que v. conn-*ussiez* qu' ils conn-*ussent*	
IV. Pres. Part. connaiss-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je connaiss-*ais* tu connaiss-*ais* il connaiss-*ait* n. connaiss-*ions* v. connaiss-*iez* ils connaiss-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. *1st, 2nd, & 3rd p. plur.* — — — n. connaiss-*ons* v. connaiss-*ez* ils connaiss-*ent*
V. Past Part. conn-*u, e*	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai conn-*u*	2. Pass. Voice. je suis conn-*u, e*

Note.—Paraître is conjugated like *connaître*.

121.—(4) Croire, *to believe.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. croi-*re*	1. Future. je croi-r-*ai* tu croi-r-*as* il croi-r-*a* n. croi-r-*ons* v. croi-r-*ez* ils croi-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. je croi-r-*ais* tu croi-r-*ais* il croi-r-*ait* n. croi-r-*ions* v. croi-r-*iez* ils croi-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je croi-*s* tu croi-*s* il croi-*t* n. croy-*ons* v. croy-*ez* ils croi-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je croi-*e* que tu croi-*es* qu' il croi-*e* que n. croy-*ions* que v. croy-*iez* qu' ils croi-*ent*	2. Imperative. — croi-*s* qu'il croi-*e* croy-*ons* croy-*ez* qu'ils croi-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je cr*us* tu cr*us* il cr*ut* n. cr*ûmes* v. cr*ûtes* ils cr*urent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je cr*usse* que tu cr*usses* qu' il cr*ût* que n. cr*ussions* que v. cr*ussiez* qu' ils cr*ussent*	
IV. Pres. Part. croy-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je croy-*ais* tu croy-*ais* il croy-*ait* n. croy-*ions* v. croy-*iez* ils croy-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. *1st, 2nd, & 3rd p. plur.* — — — n. croy-*ons* v. croy-*ez* ils croi-*ent*
V. Past Part. cru, *e*	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai cru	2. Pass Voice. je suis cru, *e*

122.—(5) Croître, *to grow.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. croît-*re*	1. Future. je croît-r-*ai* tu croît-r-*as* il croît-r-*a* n. croît-r-*ons* v. croît-r-*ez* ils croît-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. je croît-r-*ais* tu croît-r-*ais* il croît-r-*ait* n. croît-r-*ions* v. croît-r-*iez* ils croît-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je croî-*s* tu croî-*s* il croî-*t* n. croiss-*ons*[1] v. croiss-*ez* ils croiss-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je croiss-*e* que tu croiss-*es* qu' il croiss-*e* que n. croiss-*ions* que v. croiss-*iez* qu' ils croiss-*ent*	2. Imperative. — croî-*s* qu'il croiss-*e* croiss-*ons* croiss-*ez* qu'ils croiss-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je crû*s* tu crû*s* il crû*t* n. crû*mes* v. crû*tes* ils crû*rent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je crû*sse* que tu crû*sses* qu' il crû*t* que n. crû*ssions* que v. crû*ssiez* qu' ils crû*ssent*	
IV. Pres. Part. croiss-*ant*[1]	1. Imperfect. je croiss-*ais*[1] tu croiss-*ais* il croiss-*ait* n. croiss-*ions* v. croiss-*iez* ils croiss-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. *1st, 2nd, & 3rd p. plur.* — — — n. croiss-*ons* v. croiss-*ez* ils croiss-*ent*
V. Past Part.[2] crû, crûe	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai crû	2. Pass. Voice. je suis crû, crûe

[1] On the *ss*, see *Reasons and Illustrations*, § 317.

[2] The Past Participle of *accroître* and *décroître* has no circumflex accent: *accru, décru.*

123.—(6) Lire, *to read.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. li-*re*	1. Future. je li-r-*ai* tu li-r-*as* il li-r-*a* n. li-r-*ons* v. li-r-*ez* ils li-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. je li-r-*ais* tu li-r-*ais* il li-r-*ait* n. li-r-*ions* v. li-r-*iez* ils li-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je li-*s* tu li-*s* il li-*t* n. lis-*ons* [1] v. lis-*ez* ils lis-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je lis-*e* que tu lis-*es* qu' il lis-*e* que n. lis-*ions* que v. lis-*iez* qu' ils lis-*ent*	2. Imperative. — li-*s* qu'il lis-*e* lis-*ons* lis-*ez* qu'ils lis-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je l*us* tu l*us* il l*ut* n. l*ûmes* v. l*ûtes* ils l*urent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je l*usse* que tu l*usses* qu' il l*ût* que n. l*ussions* que v. l*ussiez* qu' ils l*ussent*	
IV. Pres. Part. lis-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je lis-*ais* tu lis-*ais* il lis-*ait* n. lis-*ions* v. lis-*iez* ils lis-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. — — — n. lis-*ons* v. lis-*ez* ils lis-*ent*
V. Past Part. lu, *e*	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai lu	2. Pass. Voice. je suis lu, *e*

[1] On the *s* in *lisons, lisez,* &c. see *Reasons and Illustrations,* § 323.

124.—(7) Moudre, *to grind.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. moud-*re*	1. Future. je moud-r-*ai* tu moud-r-*as* il moud-r-*a* n. moud-r-*ons* v. moud-r-*ez* ils moud-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. je moud-r-*ais* tu moud-r-*ais* il moud-r-*ait* n. moud-r-*ions* v. moud-r-*iez* ils moud-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je moud-*s* tu moud-*s* il moud- n. moul-*ons*[1] v. moul-*ez* ils moul-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je moul-*e* que tu moul-*es* qu' il moul-*e* que n. moul-*ions* que v. moul-*iez* qu' ils moul-*ent*	2. Imperative. — moud-*s* qu'il moul-*e* moul-*ons* moul-*ez* qu'ils moul-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je moul-*us* tu moul-*us* il moul-*ut* n. moul-*ûmes* v. moul-*ûtes* ils moul-*urent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je moul-*usse* que tu moul-*usses* qu' il moul-*ût* que n. moul-*ussions* que v. moul-*ussiez* qu' ils moul-*ussent*	
IV. Pres. Part. moul-*ant*[1]	1. Imperfect. je moul-*ais* tu moul-*ais* il moul-*ait* n. moul-*ions* v. moul-*iez* ils moul-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. — — — n. moul-*ons* v. moul-*ez* ils moul-*ent*
V. Past Part. moul-*u*	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai moul-*u*	2. Pass. Voice. je suis moul-*u*, *e*

[1] On the *l* in *moulant*, *moulons*, &c., see *Reasons and Illustrations*, § 317

125.—(8) Paître, *to graze.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. paît-*re*	1. Future. je paît-r-*ai* tu paît-r-*as* il paît-r-*a* n. paît-r-*ons* v. paît-r-*ez* ils paît-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. je paît-r-*ais* tu paît-r-*ais* il paît-r-*ait* n. paît-r-*ions* v. paît-r-*iez* ils paît-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je pai-*s* tu pai-*s* il paî-*t* n. paiss-*ons* v. paiss-*ez* ils paiss-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je paiss-*e* que tu paiss-*es* qu' il paiss-*e* que n. paiss-*ions* que v. paiss-*iez* qu' ils paiss-*ent*	2. Imperative. — pai-*s* qu'il paiss-*e* paiss-*ons* paiss-*ez* qu'ils paiss-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. —	1. Pret. Def. Subj. —	
IV. Pres. Part. paiss-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je paiss-*ais* tu paiss-*ais* il paiss-*ait* n. paiss-*ions* v. paiss-*iez* ils paiss-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. — — — n. paiss-*ons* v. paiss-*ez* ils paiss-*ent*
V. Past Part. pu (*no fem.*)	1. Comp. Tenses j'ai pu	

Note 1.—**Repaître,** *to feed,* has a Pret. Def. Ind. and Subj.: *je repus, que je repusse.*

Note 2.—The general meaning of *paître* is *to graze, to feed upon;* but it is also used in the sense of *taking to pasture, taking to graze:* il vient de paître son troupeau; and thirdly, it means *to feed* (term of falconry), paître l'oiseau.

126.—(9) Plaire, *to please.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. plai-*re*	1. Future. je plai-r-*ai* tu plai-r-*as* il plai-r-*a* n. plai-r-*ons* v. plai-r-*ez* ils plai-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. je plai-r-*ais* tu plai-r-*ais* il plai-r-*ait* n. plai-r-*ions* v. plai-r-*iez* ils plai-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je plai-*s* tu plai-*s* il plai-*t* n. plais-*ons* v. plais-*ez* ils plais-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je plais-*e* que tu plais-*es* qu' il plais-*e* que n. plais-*ions* que v. plais-*iez* qu' ils plais-*ent*	2. Imperative. — plai-s qu'il plais-*e* plais-*ons* plais-*ez* qu'ils plais-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je pl*us* tu pl*us* il pl*ut* n. pl*ûmes* v. pl*ûtes* ils pl*urent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je pl*usse* que tu pl*usses* qu' il pl*ût* que n. pl*ussions* que v. pl*ussiez* qu' ils pl*ussent*	
IV. Pres. Part. plais-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je plais-*ais* tu plais-*ais* il plais-*ait* n. plais-*ions* v. plais-*iez* ils plais-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. — — — n. plais-*ons* v. plais-*ez* ils plais-*ent*
V. Past Part. plu	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai plu	

127.—(10) Résoudre, 1. *to decide*, 2. *to reduce*.

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
Infinitive. résoud-*re*	1. Future. je résoud-r-*ai*, &c.	2. Conditional. je résoud-r-*ais*, &c.
II. Pres. Ind. je résou-*s* tu résou-*s* il résou-*t* n. résolv-*ons* [1] v. résolv-*ez* ils résolv-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je résolv-*e* que tu résolv-*es* qu' il résolv-*e* que n. résolv-*ions* que v. résolv-*iez* qu' ils résolv-*ent*	2. Imperative. — résou-*s* qu'il résolv-*e* résolv-*ons* résolv-*ez* qu'ils résolv-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je résol-*us* tu résol-*us* il résol-*ut* n. résol-*ûmes* v. résol-*ûtes* ils résol-*urent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je résol-*usse* que tu résol-*usses* qu' il résol-*ût* que n. résol-*ussions* que v. résol-*ussiez* qu' ils résol-*ussent*	
V. Pres. Part. résolv-*ant* [1]	1. Imperfect. je résolv-*ais* [1] tu résolv-*ais* il résolv-*ait* n. résolv-*ions* v. résolv-*iez* ils résolv-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. — — — n. résolv-*ons* v. résolv-*ez* ils résolv-*ent*
V. Past Part. (1) résol-*u*, *e* (2) résous (no fem.)	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai résol-*u*	

Note 1.—**Absoudre**, *to absolve*, and **dissoudre**, *to dissolve*, are conjugated like *résoudre*, only they have no Pret. Def. ; their Past Part. is *absous*, *absoute*, *dissous*, *dissoute* (*dissolu* is an adjective, and means *profligate*, *dissolute*).

Note 2.—**Résolu** = *determined*, *decided* ; **résous** = *turned*, *changed*, *reduced* : brouillard résous en pluie, *fog turned into rain*.

[1] On the *v*. see *Reasons*, &c., § 317.

128.—(11) Taire, *to keep secret.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. tai-*re*	1. Future. je tai-r-*ai* tu tai-r-*as* il tai-r-*a* n. tai-r-*ons* v. tai-r-*ez* ils tai-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. je tai-r-*ais* tu tai-r-*ais* il tai-r-*ait* n. tai-r-*ions* v. tai-r-*iez* ils tai-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je tai-*s* tu tai-*s* il tai-*t* n. tais-*ons* v. tais-*ez* ils tais-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je tais-*e* que tu tais-*es* qu' il tais-*e* que n. tais-*ions* que v. tais-*iez* qu' ils tais-*ent*	2. Imperative. — tai-*s* qu'il tais-*e* tais-*ons* tais-*ez* qu'ils tais-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je t*us* tu t*us* il t*ut* n. t*ûmes* v. t*ûtes* ils t*urent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je t*usse* que tu t*usses* qu' il t*ût* que n. t*ussions* que v. t*ussiez* qu' ils t*ussent*	
IV. Pres. Part. tais-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je tais-*ais* tu tais-*ais* il tais-*ait* n. tais-*ions* v. tais-*iez* ils tais-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. — — — n. tais-*ons* v. tais-*ez* ils tais-*ent*
V. Past Part. tû, *e*	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai tû	

Note.—**Se taire** means *to be silent : je me tais, tu te tais, il se tait ; je me taisais, tu te taisais, il se taisait ; je me suis tû, tu t'es tû, il s'est tû,* &c.

129.—(12) Vivre, *to live.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. viv-*re*	1. Future. je viv-r-*ai* tu viv-r-*as* il viv-r-*a* n. viv-r-*ons* v. viv-r-*ez* ils viv-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. je viv-r-*ais* tu viv-r-*ais* il viv-r-*ait* n. viv-r-*ions* v. viv-r-*iez* ils viv-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je vi-*s* tu vi-*s* il vi-*t* n. viv-*ons* v. viv-*ez* ils viv-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je viv-*e* que tu viv-*es* qu' il viv-*e* que n. viv-*ions* que v. viv-*iez* qu' ils viv-*ent*	2. Imperative. — vi-*s* qu'il viv-*e* viv-*ons* viv-*ez* qu'ils viv-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je véc-*us*[1] tu véc-*us* il véc-*ut* n. véc-*ûmes* v. véc-*ûtes* ils véc-*urent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je véc-*usse* que tu véc-*usses* qu' il véc-*ût* que n. véc-*ussions* que v. véc-*ussiez* qu' ils véc-*ussent*	
IV. Pres. Part. viv-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je viv-*ais* tu viv-*ais* il viv-*ait* n. viv-*ions* v. viv-*iez* ils viv-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. — — — n. viv-*ons* v. viv-*ez* ils viv-*ent*
V. Past Part. véc-*u* (no fem.)	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai véc-*u*	

[1] See *Reasons and Illustrations*, § 323 (*B*), (note to *vivre*).

130.—*bb.* Those with an irregular Future.

(1) **Courir**, *to run.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. cour-*ir*	1. Future. je cour-r-ai [1] tu cour-r-*as* il cour-r-*a* n. cour-r-*ons* v. cour-r-*ez* ils cour-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. je cour-r-ais tu cour-r-*ais* il cour-r-*ait* n. cour-r-*ions* v. cour-r-*iez* ils cour-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je cour-*s* tu cour-*s* il cour-*t* n. cour-*ons* v. cour-*ez* ils cour-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je cour-*e* que tu cour-*es* qu' il cour-*e* que n. cour-*ions* que v. cour-*iez* qu' ils cour-*ent*	2. Imperative. — cour-*s* qu'il cour-*e* cour-*ons* cour-*ez* qu'ils cour-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je cour-*us* tu cour-*us* il cour-*ut* n. cour-*ûmes* v. cour-*ûtes* ils cour-*urent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je cour-*usse* que tu cour-*usses* qu' il cour-*ût* que n. cour-*ussions* que v. cour-*ussiez* qu' ils cour-*ussent*	
IV. Pres. Part. cour-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je cour-*ais* tu cour-*ais* il cour-*ait* n. cour-*ions* v. cour-*iez* ils cour-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. — — — n. cour-*ons* v. cour-*ez* ils cour-*ent*
V. Past Part. cour-*u*	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai cour-*u*	

[1] See above, § 96, and *Reasons*, &c., § 313, N. iii. (*a*).

131.—(2) Déchoir, *to decay.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. déch-*oir*	1. Future. je **décher-r-ai** [1] tu décher-r-*as* il décher-r-*a* n. décher-r-*ons* v. décher-r-*ez* ils décher-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. je **décher**-r-ais tu décher-r-*ais* il décher-r-*ait* n. décher-r-*ions* v. décher-r-*iez* ils décher-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je déchoi-*s* tu déchoi-*s* il déchoi-*t* n. déchoy-*ons* v. déchoy-*ez* ils déchoi-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je déchoi-*e* que tu déchoi-*es* qu' il déchoi*e* que n. déchoy-*ions* que v. déchoy-*iez* qu' ils déchoi-*ent*	2. Imperative. — déchoi-*s* qu'il déchoi-*e* déchoy-*ons* déchoy-*ez* qu'ils déchoi-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je déch-*us* tu déch-*us* il déch-*ut* n. déch-*ûmes* v. déch-*ûtes* ils déch-*urent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je déch-*usse* que tu déch-*usses* qu' il déch-*ût* que n. déch-*ussions* que v. déch-*ussiez* qu' ils déch-*ussent*	
IV. Pres. Part. —	1. Imperfect. je déchoy-*ais* tu déchoy-*ais* il déchoy-*ait* n. déchoy-*ions* v. déchoy-*iez* ils déchoy-*aient*	
V. Past Part. déch-*u*	1. Comp. Tenses. je suis déch-*u, e*	

[1] See above, § 96, and *Reasons*, &c., § 313, N. iii. (*a*).

132.—(3) Devoir, *to owe, to be forced.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. dev-*oir*	1. Future. je dev-r-ai[1] tu dev-r-*as* il dev-r-*a* n. dev-r-*ons* v. dev-r-*ez* ils dev-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. je dev-r-ais tu dev-r-*ais* il dev-r-*ait* n. dev-r-*ions* v. dev-r-*iez* ils dev-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je doi-*s* tu doi-*s* il doi-*t* n. dev-*ons* v. dev-*ez* ils doiv-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je doiv-*e* que tu doiv-*es* qu' il doiv-*e* que n. dev-*ions* que v. dev-*iez* qu' ils doiv-*ent*	2. Imperative. — doi-*s* qu'il doiv-*e* dev-*ons* dev-*ez* qu'ils doiv-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je d*us* tu d*us* il d*ut* n. d*ûmes* v. d*ûtes* ils d*urent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je d*usse* que tu d*usses* qu' il d*ût* que n. d*ussions* que v. d*ussiez* qu' ils d*ussent*	
IV. Pres. Part. dev-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je dev-*ais* tu dev-*ais* il dev-*ait* n. dev-*ions* v. dev-*iez* ils dev-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. — — — n. dev-*ons* v. dev-*ez* —
V. Past Part. dû; f. due	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai dû	2. Pass. Voice. il est dû elle est due

[1] See above, § 96, and *Reasons*, &c., § 313, N. ii.

133.—(4) Mourir, *to die.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. mour-*ir*	1. Future. je mour-r-ai [1] tu mour-r-*as* il mour-r-*a* n. mour-r-*ons* v. mour-r-*ez* ils mour-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. je mour-r-ais tu mour-r-*ais* il mour-r-*ait* n. mour-r-*ions* v. mour-r-*iez* ils mour-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je meur-*s* tu meur-*s* il meur-*t* n. mour-*ons* v. mour-*ez* ils meur-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je meur-*e* que tu meur-*es* qu' il meur-*e* que n. mour-*ions* que v. mour-*iez* qu' ils meur-*ent*	2. Imperative. — meur-*s* qu'il meur-*e* mour-*ons* mour-*ez* qu'ils meur-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je mour-*us* tu mour-*us* il mour-*ut* n. mour-*ûmes* v. mour-*ûtes* ils mour-*urent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je mour-*usse* que tu mour-*usses* qu' il mour-*ût* que n. mour-*ussions* que v. mour-*ussiez* qu' ils mour-*ussent*	
IV. Pres. Part. mour-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je mour-*ais* tu mour-*ais* il mour-*ait* n. mour-*ions* v. mour-*iez* ils mour-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. — — — n. mour-*ons* v. mour-*ez* —
V. Past Part. mort, *e*	1. Comp. Tenses. je suis mort, *e*	

[1] See above, § 96, and *Reasons*, &c., § 313, N. iv.

134.—(5) Mouvoir, *to move.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. mouv-*oir*	1. Future. je mouv-r-ai [1] tu mouv-r-*as* il mouv-r-*a* n. mouv-r-*ons* v. mouv-r-*ez* ils mouv-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. je mouv-r-ais tu mouv-r-*ais* il mouv-r-*ait* n. mouv-r-*ions* v. mouv-r-*iez* ils mouv-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je meu-*s* tu meu-*s* il meu-*t* n. mouv-*ons* v. mouv-*ez* ils meuv-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je meuv-*e* que tu meuv-*es* qu' il meuv-*e* que n. mouv-*ions* que v. mouv-*iez* qu' ils meuv-*ent*	2. Imperative. — meu-*s* qu'il meuv-*e* mouv-*ons* mouv-*ez* qu'ils meuv-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je m*us* tu m*us* il m*ut* n. m*ûmes* v. m*ûtes* ils m*urent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je m*usse* que tu m*usses* qu' il m*ût* que n. m*ussions* que v m*ussiez* qu' ils m*ussent*	
IV. Pres. Part. mouv-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je mouv-*ais* tu mouv-*ais* il mouv-*ait* n. mouv-*ions* v. mouv-*iez* ils mouv-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. — — — n. mouv-*ons* v. mouv-*ez* —
V. Past Part. mû, mue	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai mû	2. Pass. Voice. je suis mû, e

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 313, N. ii.

135.—(6) Pouvoir, *to be able.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. pouv-*oir*	1. Future. je pour-r-ai [1] tu pour-r-*as* il pour-r-*a* n. pour-r-*ons* v. pour-r-*ez* ils pour-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. je pour-r-ais tu pour-r-*ais* il pour-r-*ait* n. pour-r-*ions* v. pour-r-*iez* ils pour-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je peu-*x* (puis) tu peu-*x* il peu-*t* n. pouv-*ons* v. pouv-*ez* ils peuv-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je puiss-*e* que tu puiss-*es* qu' il puiss-*e* que n. puiss-*ions* que v. puiss-*iez* qu' ils puiss-*ent*	
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je p*us* tu p*us* il p*ut* n. p*ûmes* v. p*ûtes* ils p*urent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je p*usse* que tu p*usses* qu' il p*ût* que n. p*ussions* que v. p*ussiez* qu' ils p*ussent*	
IV. Pres. Part. pouv-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je pouv-*ais* tu pouv-*ais* il pouv-*ait* n. pouv-*ions* v. pouv-*iez* ils pouv-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. — — — n. pouv-*ons* v. pouv-*ez* —
V. Past Part. pu	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai pu	

Note.—For the interrogative form, only *puis-je* is used.

[1] See above, § 96, and *Reasons*, &c., § 313.

136.—(7) Recevoir, *to receive.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. recev-*oir*	1. Future. je recev-r-ai[1] tu recev-r-*as* il recev-r-*a* n. recev-r-*ons* v. recev-r-*ez* ils recev-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. je recev-r-ais tu recev-r-*ais* il recev-r-*ait* n. recev-r-*ions* v. recev-r-*iez* ils recev-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je reçoi-*s* tu reçoi-*s* il reçoi-*t* n. recev-*ons* v. recev-*ez* ils reçoiv-ent	1. Pres. Subj. que je reçoiv-*e* que tu reçoiv-*es* qu' il reçoiv-*e* que n. recev-*ions* que v. recev-*iez* qu' ils reçoiv-*ent*	2. Imperative. — reçoi-*s* qu'il reçoiv-*e* recev-*ons* recev-*ez* qu'ils reçoiv-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je reç-*us* tu reç-*us* il reç-*ut* n. reç-*ûmes* v. reç-*ûtes* ils reç-*urent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je reç-*usse* que tu reç-*usses* qu' il reç-*ût* que n. reç-*ussions* que v. reç-*ussiez* qu' ils reç-*ussent*	
IV. Pres. Part. recev-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je recev-*ais* tu recev-*ais* il recev-*ait* n. recev-*ions* v. recev-*iez* ils recev-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. — — — n. recev-*ons* v. recev-*ez* —
V. Past Part. reç-*u*, *e*	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai reç-*u*	2. Pass. Voice. je suis reç-*u*, *e*

Note.—Conjugate like *recevoir* all Verbs in *-cevoir* (*apercevoir*, *concevoir*).

See above, § 96, and *Reasons*, &c., § 313, N. ii.

137.—(8) Savoir, *to know.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. sav-*oir*	1. Future. je sau-r-ai [1] tu sau-r-*as* il sau-r-*a* n. sau-r-*ons* v. sau-r-*ez* ils sau-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. je sau-r-ais tu sau-r-*ais* il sau-r-*ait* n. sau-r-*ions* v. sau-r-*iez* ils sau-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je sai-*s* tu sai-*s* il sai-*t* n. sav-*ons* v. sav-*ez* ils sav-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je sach-*e* que tu sach-*es* qu' il sach-*e* que n. sach-*ions* que v. sach-*iez* qu' ils sach-*ent*	2. Imperative. — sach-*e* qu'il sach-*e* sach-*ons* sach-*ez* qu'ils sach-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je *sus* tu *sus* il *sut* n. *sûmes* v. *sûtes* ils *surent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je *susse* que tu *susses* qu' il *sût* que n. *sussions* que v. *sussiez* qu' ils *sussent*	
IV. Pres. Part. sach-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je sav-*ais* tu sav-*ais* il sav-*ait* n. sav-*ions* v. sav-*iez* ils sav-*aient*	
V. Past Part. su, *e*	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai su	2. Pass. Voice. il est su elle est sue

[1] See above, § 96, and *Reasons*, &c., § 313, N. iii. (*b*).

138.—(9) Valoir, *to be worth.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. val-*oir*	1. Future. je vaud-r-ai [1] tu vaud-r-*as* il vaud-r-*a* n. vaud-r-*ons* v. vaud-r-*ez* ils vaud-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. je vaud-r-ais tu vaud-r-*ais* il vaud-r-*ait* n. vaud-r-*ions* v. vaud-r-*iez* ils vaud-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je vau-*x* tu vau-*x* il vau-*t* n. val-*ons* v. val-*ez* ils val-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je vaill-*e* que tu vaill-*es* qu' il vaill-*e* que n. val-*ions* que v. val-*iez* qu' ils vaill-*ent*	2. Imperative. — vau-*x* qu'il vaill-*e* val-*ons* val-*ez* qu'ils vaill-*ent*
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je val-*us* tu val-*us* il val-*ut* n. val-*ûmes* v. val-*ûtes* ils val-*urent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je val-*usse* que tu val-*usses* qu' il val-*ût* que n. val-*ussions* que v. val-*ussiez* qu' ils val-*ussent*	
IV. Pres. Part. val-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je val-*ais* tu val-*ais* il val-*ait* n. val-*ions* v. val-*iez* ils val-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. — — — n. val-*ons* v. val-*ez* ils val-*ent*
V. Past Part. val-*u*	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai val-*u*	

Note.—Prévaloir, *to prevail*, is conjugated in the same manner, except in the Subj. Pres., which is: *que je prévale, prévales, prévale, prévalions*, &c.

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 313, and above, § 96.

139.—(10) Vouloir, *to wish, to be willing.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. voul-*oir*	1. Future. je voud-r-ai [1] tu voud-r-*as* il voud-r-*a* n. voud-r-*ons* v. voud-r-*ez* ils voud-r-*ont*	2. Conditional. je voud-r-ais tu voud-r-*ais* il voud-r-*ait* n. voud-r-*ions* v. voud-r-*iez* ils voud-r-*aient*
II. Pres. Ind. je veu-*x* tu veu-*x* il veu-*t* n. voul-*ons* v. voul-*ez* ils veul-*ent*	1. Pres. Subj. que je veuill-*e* que tu veuill-*es* qu' il veuill-*e* que n. voul-*ions* que v. voul-*iez* qu' ils veuill-*ent*	2. Imperative. — — — — veuill-*ez* —
III. Pret. Def. Ind. je voul-*us* tu voul-*us* il voul-*ut* n. voul-*ûmes* v. voul-*ûtes* ils voul-*urent*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. que je voul-*usse* que tu voul-*usses* qu' il voul-*ût* que n. voul-*ussions* que v. voul-*ussiez* qu' ils voul-*ussent*	
IV. Pres. Part. voul-*ant*	1. Imperfect. je voul-*ais* tu voul-*ais* il voul-*ait* n. voul-*ions* v. voul-*iez* ils voul-*aient*	2. Pres. Ind. — — — n. voul-*ons* v. voul-*ez* —
V. Past Part. voul-*u*	1. Comp. Tenses. j'ai voul-*u*	

[1] See above, § 96, and *Reasons*, &c., § 313.

d. Impersonal and Defective Verbs.

140.—Falloir, *to be necessary.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. fall-*oir*	1. Future. il faud-r-a [1]	2. Conditional. il faud-r-ait
II. Pres. Ind. il faut	1. Pres. Subj. qu'il faill-*e*	
III. Pret. Def. Ind. il fall-*ut*	1. Pret. Def. Subj. qu'il fall-*ût*	
IV. Pres. Part. —	1. Imperfect. il fall-*ait*	
V. Past Part. fall-*u*	1. Comp. Tenses. il a fall-*u* [2]	

Note.—There are two ways of expressing the English *I must, thou must, he must,* &c. :—

I must finish : *il faut que je finisse,* or *il me faut finir*
Thou must write : *il faut que tu écrives,* or *il te faut écrire*
He must go : *il faut qu'il aille,* or *il lui faut aller*
We must leave : *il faut que nous partions,* or *il nous faut partir*
You must come : *il faut que vous veniez,* or *il vous faut venir*
They must sell : *il faut qu'ils vendent,* or *il leur faut vendre*

[1] See *Reasons,* &c., § 313.

[2] The Compound Tenses of *falloir* are : *Infin.* avoir fallu, *to have been necessary ; Fut.* il aura fallu, *it will have been necessary ; Condit.* il aurait fallu, *it would have been necessary ; Pret. Def. Ind.* il a fallu, *it has been necessary ; Pret. Indef. Subj.* qu'il ait fallu, *that it may have been necessary ; Past Ant.* il eut fallu, *it had been necessary ; Pret. Ant. Subj.* qu'il eût fallu, *that it might have been necessary ; Pluperf.* il avait fallu, *it had been necessary ; Partic.* ayant fallu, *having been necessary.*

141.—Pleuvoir, *to rain.*

Principal Tenses.	*Derived Tenses.*	
I. Infinitive. pleuv-*oir*	1. Future. il pleuv-r-a	2. Conditional. il pleuv-r-ait
II. Pres. Ind. il pleut [1]	1. Pres. Subj. qu'il pleuv-*e*	
III. Pret. Def. Ind. il plut	1. Pret. Def. Subj. qu'il plût	
IV. Pres. Part. pleuv-*ant*	1. Imperfect. il pleuv-*ait*	
V. Past Part. plu	1. Comp. Tenses. il a plu	

142.—The following Verbs have no Preter. Defin.: **paître** (§ 125), **traire** (§ 111), **luire** (§ 100), **absoudre** (§ 127), **dissoudre** (§ 127).

143.—Several Verbs are used only in the Infinitive and Participle: **ouïr** * and **ouï** (*to hear*), **quérir** (*to fetch*),[2] **forfaire** (*forfeit*), **méfaire** (*to do evil*), **malfaire** (*to do mischief*), **tissu**, **issu**, derived from the old Infinitives **tistre** [3] (*to weave*) and **issir** * (*to issue*).

Of the Verbs mentioned in §§ 144—157, the following tenses only are in use:—

[1] Figuratively speaking, *pleuvoir* is also used in the 3rd Pers. Plur., e.g. *les balles pleuvent, pleuvaient de toutes parts.*

[2] This Verb is especially used after the Infinitives *aller, envoyer, venir:* envoyez quérir le médecin, *send for the doctor.*

[3] The synonym of *tistre* is *tisser*, which is conjugated like *parler.*

144.—**Apparoir** (law) *to be apparent: il appert.*

145.—**Braire** (*to bray*): *il brait, ils braient; il braira, ils brairont; il brairait, ils brairaient; qu'il braie; qu'ils braient; brayant.*

146.—**Bruire,** *to roar, to rustle:* Imperf., *il bruyait, ils bruyaient;*[1] Pres. Part., *bruyant.*

147.—**Choir,**[2] *to fall:* Past. Part., *chu, chue* (only used in Poetry).

148.—**Clore,** *to close: je clos, tu clos, il clôt; je clôrai,* &c.; *je clôrais;* Imper., *clos;* Past. Part., *clos, close.*

149.—**Décevoir,** *to deceive,* is used only in the Past Part. *déçu, déçue.*

150.—**Défaillir,*** *to faint, to fail: nous défaillons, vous défaillez, ils défaillent; je défaillis; je défaillais, tu défaillais,* &c.; *défailli.*

151.—**Échoir,** *to be due, to fall to,* is conjugated like *déchoir* (§ 131), but has no Imperative nor a Present of the Subjunctive; in the Pres. Indic., the 3rd Person Sing. and Plur. only is in use: *il échet* or *il échoit* (pronounced like *échet*), *ils échéent* or *ils échoient*; Pres. Part., *échéant.*

152.—**Éclore,** (1) *to be hatched,* (2) *to blow* (*flowers*): *il éclôt, ils éclosent; qu'il éclose, qu'ils éclosent; il éclôra, ils éclôront; il éclôrait, ils éclôraient;* Past Part., *éclos, éclose.*

153.—**Faillir,*** *to fail:*[3] Pret. Def., *je faillis, tu faillis,* &c.; *faillant; failli.* The forms *je faux, tu faux, il faut, nous faillons, vous faillez, ils faillent; je faillais,* &c.; *je faudrai* or *je faillirai* are very seldom used, and only in familiar language.

[1] We also find *bruissent, bruissaient* (Chateaubr.)

[2] See *Reasons,* &c., §§ 313 and 323 (C).

[3] Followed by an Infinitive, this Verb means *nearly, to be on the point of:* elle a failli tomber, *she nearly fell.*

154.—**Frire,** *to fry:* Pres. Ind., *je fris, tu fris, il frit; je frirai, tu friras,* &c.; *je frirais,* &c.; Imperat., *fris;* Past Part., *frit, frite.* The tenses which are wanting are supplied by the Infinitive preceded by *faire: nous faisons frire, je faisais frire,* &c.

155.—**Gésir,** *to lie:* Pres. Ind. 3rd Pers. Sing., *gît,* Plur. *n. gisons,*[1] *gisez, gisent;* Imperf., *gisais,* &c.; Pres. Part., *gisant: ci-gît,* here lies.

156.—*a.* **Seoir,** (1) *to become, to fit:* il sied, ils siéent; il séyait, ils séyaient; il siéra, ils siéront; il siérait, ils siéraient; séyant: (2) *to sit, to be situated:* séant (*sitting*), sis, sise (*situated*).

(*b*) **Surseoir,** *to suspend:* je sursois, tu sursois, il sursoit, n. sursoyons, v. sursoyez, ils sursoient; je sursis, &c.; que je sursisse, &c.; Imperf., je sursoyais; Imper., sursois, sursoyons, sursoyez; Fut., surseoirai, &c.; Cond., surseoirais, &c.

157.—**Sourdre,** *to spring out:* Pres. 3rd Pers. Sing., *sourd,* Pl. *sourdent* (*l'eau sourd de la terre*).

[1] On the pronunciation of the *s* in *gisons,* &c., see § 18.

CHAPTER II.—ARTICLES (ARTICLES.)[1]

158.—There are three Articles in French: the *Definite*, the *Indefinite*, and the *Partitive*.

159.—I. The Definite Article.

	Sing.			Plur.	
Masc.	le,	l'	before a *vowel* or a silent *h*.	les	*the*
Fem.	la,	l'		les	*the*

160.—As there is no Declension proper,[2] the Nominative[3] of a noun is indicated by its place *before*, the Accusative by its place *after*, the verb. As to the other cases, the want of inflections is supplied by Prepositions. *De* (*of*, *from*) serves to form the Genitive, *à* (*to*, *at*) the Dative.

Nom.	Jean	*John*	mon père	*my father*
Gen.	de Jean	*John's*[4]	de mon père	*of my father*
Dat.	à Jean	*to John*	à mon père	*to my father*
Acc.	Jean	*John*	mon père	*my father*

161.—With the two Prepositions *de* and *à*, the Def.

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 332.
[2] See Introduction to *Reasons*, &c., § 278.
[3] It is for the sake of convenience only that we retain the names of *Nominative*, *Genitive*, &c.
[4] Or *of*, *from John*.

Art. forms the following contractions: *de le = du; de les = des; à le = au; à les = aux.* Thus we get

	Singular.			Plural.	
	Masc.	Fem.	Masc. & Fem.	Masc. & Fem.	
Nom.	le	la	l'	les	*the*
Gen.	du	de la	de l'	des	*of the*
Dat.	au	à la	à l'	aux	*to the*
Acc.	le	la	l'	les	*the*

162.—*Le* and *la* are used before words beginning with a *consonant* or an *h aspirate; l', de l', à l'*, before words beginning with a *vowel* or an *h mute.*

	Singular.			Plural.
Nom.	*Le* livre	*la* femme	*l'*oncle	*les* plumes
Gen.	*du* livre	*de la* femme	*de l'*oncle	*des* plumes
Dat.	*au* livre	*à la* femme	*à l'*oncle	*aux* plumes
Acc.	*le* livre	*la* femme	*l'*oncle	*les* plumes

163.—The words *Monsieur, Madame, Monseigneur* (followed by a *title*), and the pronoun *tout* always separate the Def. Art. from the Prep. *de* and *à*, and consequently do not allow these words to form any contractions: *La plus belle fleur* de *tout* le *jardin; Voici la lettre* de *Monsieur* le *comte.*

164.—II. The Indefinite Article.

	Masc.		Fem.	
Nom.	un	*a*	une	*a*
Gen.	*d'*un	*of a*	*d'*une	*of a*
Dat.	*à* un	*to a*	*à* une	*to a*
Acc.	un	*a*	une	*a*

The Part. Art. *des* may be used to supply the plural of *un:*

Un habit—'es habits; une poire—des poires.

165.—III. The Partitive Article.

	Singular.				Plural.
	Masc.	Fem.	Masc. & Fem.		Masc. & Fem.
Nom.	du	de la	de l'	before a *vowel* or *h* mute	des
Gen.	de	de	d'		de (d')
Dat.	à du	à de la	à de l'		à des
Acc.	du	de la	de l'		des

166.—This Article represents the English *some* or *any* (expressed or understood), and must be employed before Nouns which designate not the *whole*, but only *a part* of the persons or things named.

N. *Du* vin vaut mieux que *du* cidre	*Wine* is better than *cider*
G. Une tasse *de* lait	A cup *of* milk
D. Ce métal ressemble *à du* fer	This metal resembles *iron*
A. Donne-moi *de l'*encre et *des* plumes	Give me (*some*) *ink* and (*some*) *pens*

167.—The Genitive of the Part. Art. *de* must be used after—

(1) All Substantives (*verre, douzaine*, &c.) and Adverbs expressing *Quantity* and *Measure*:—

Peu,[1] moins, plus, trop, tant;
beaucoup, combien, assez, autant.

(2) All Adverbs of *Negation*:—

ne...pas	*no*	ne...jamais	*never*
ne...point	*no*	ne...rien	*nothing*
ne...guère	*scarcely any*	ne...plus	*no more*

Il a assez *d'*argent	*He has enough money*
Combien *de* livres avez-vous	*How many books have you?*
Il a autant *de* maisons que son frère	*He has as many houses as his brother*
Il n'a point *de* dettes	*He has no debts.*

[1] *Little, less, more, too much (many), so much; much, how much, enough, as much (many)*

Except.—*Bien* and *la plupart* are always followed by *de* and the *Def. Art.*: bien *des* personnes (*or* beaucoup *de* personnes); la plupart *des* hommes. N.B. *Many others* is: bien *d'*autres.

168.—When the Noun taken in a partitive sense is preceded by an *Adj.*, *de* alone serves to express the *Nom. Gen. Acc.*, and *à de* the *Dative.*

	Singular.	Plural.
N.	*de* bon vin	*de* bons enfants
G.	*de* bon vin	*de* bons enfants
D.	*à de* bon vin	*à de* bons enfants
A.	*de* bon vin	*de* bons enfants

Except.—The *Definite Article* is used instead of *de* before some Nouns preceded by an Adjective, especially when the Adjective and the Noun form only one word:—

du petit-lait	*whey*
des petits-enfants	*grand-children*
des petites-maisons	*madhouses*
des grands-maîtres	*grand-masters*
du bon sens	*common sense*
des jeunes gens	*young men*
des jeunes personnes	*young ladies*
de la bonne volonté	*willingness*

N.B.—*De* petits enfants means *little children*; *de* grands maîtres, *great masters.*

CHAPTER III.—NOUNS (SUBSTANTIFS).

I. Plural of Nouns.[1]

169.—*General Rule.* The plural of a Noun is formed by adding *s* to the singular :[2] *le frère, les frères ; la sœur, les sœurs.*

170.—*Special Rules.* The plural of Nouns is also formed—

(1) By adding *x* to the singular—[1]

a. Of all Nouns in *au*[3] and *eu.*

b. Of seven Nouns in *ou :*

bijou, caillou, chou ;
genou, hibou, joujou, pou :[4]

e.g. le château, les châteaux ; le feu, les feux ; le bijou, les bijoux.
All the other Nouns in *ou* take *s : le fou, les fous ; le sou, les sous.*

(2) By changing into *aux* the termination *al :*[1] *le cheval, les chevaux.*

[1] See *Introduction to Reasons*, &c., § 278.
[2] Nouns in *ant* and *ent* of *more than one syllable* are by some writers spelt without the final *t* in the Plural : *les enfans, les présens.*
[3] *Landau* takes *s* in the Plural : *les landaus.*
[4] *Jewel, pebble, cabbage, knee, owl, toy, louse.*

Except. bal, bocal, cal ;
carnaval, chacal, régal : [1] *les bals, les chacals,* &c.
and : aval, caracal, narval ;
nopal, pal, serval.[2]

(3). By changing into *aux* the termination *ail* of the following Nouns :—

bail, corail, émail ;
plumail, soupirail, vantail, vitrail : [3]

e.g. les baux, les vantaux. The other Nouns in *ail* take *s : les éventails.*

(4) By leaving unchanged the singular—

A. Of Nouns ending in *s, x, z : le fils, les fils.*

B. Of foreign Nouns : [4]

des Te-Deum, des post-scriptum, des ex-voto, des ecce-homo, des fac-simile.[5]

C. Of all the indeclinable Parts of Speech : les *si*, les *car ;* des *a* bien formés.

D. Of Proper Names of individuals : les deux Corneille ; les deux Pitt ; les ouvrages des Tindal, des Shaftesbury, des Bolingbroke (Villemain).

[1] *Ball, glass-bowl, wart ; carnival, jackal, treat.*
[2] *Guaranty, sea-cat, sea-unicorn ; nopal-tree, pale, serval.*
[3] *Lease, coral, enamel : feather-brush, air-hole, folding-door, stained-glass window.*
[4] There is much diversity of opinion on this rule both among authors and grammarians.
[5] The following Nouns, having become quite French, take *s* :—
(*a*) *English Nouns :* Bifteck, bill, budget, constable, jury, lady, schelling, toast, whig, tory, verdict, yacht.
(*b*) *Latin Nouns :* Accessit, agenda, album, alinéa, amen, aparté, avé, compendium, critérium, débet, déficit, dictum, duo, duplicata, errata, factum, factotum, finale, folio, forum, impromptu, mémento, muséum, palladium, pensum, quatuor, quiproquo, quolibet, specimen, ultimatum, visa.
(*c*) *Spanish Nouns :* Alguazil, hidalgo, embargo, paroli.
(*d*) *Italian Nouns :* Alto, bravo, concerto, domino, finale, numéro, opéra, oratorio, piano, soprano, trio, ténor, zéro.
N.B.—The following Nouns keep the *Italian* form of the Plural : Carbonaro, carbonari ; concetto, concetti ; dilettante, dilettanti ; lazzarone, lazzaroni ; lazzo, lazzi ; quintetto, quintetti.

Except. Proper Names take the mark of the Plural –

(*a*) When they become *Common Nouns, i.e.* when they designate individuals resembling in mind or body those whose name has been employed: La France a eu ses *Césars* et ses *Pompées*; *i.e.* such generals as Cæsar and Pompey. Cés deux avocats sont les *Cicérons* de leur pays, i.e. *great orators.*

(*b*) When the names of persons serve to designate only their *works* (writings, engravings, pictures): des *Ovids*, editions of Ovid; des *Raphaëls*, pictures of Raphaël.

(*c*) In the case of some illustrious families and dynasties: les Bourbons, Césars, Napoléons, Tudors; *and* les Abassides, Condés, Curiaces, Gracques, Guises, Héraclides, Horaces, Macchabées, Pélides, Pélopides, Pépins, Plantagenets, Ptolomées, Scipions, Séleucides, Stuarts.

(5) A double plural form is found in the following Nouns:—

1. ail	*garlic*	ails, *the g. plant* (botanical term). aulx, *the g. legumen* (the vegetable).
2. aïeul	*grandfather*	aïeuls, *grandfathers* aïeux, *ancestors*
3. ciel	*sky, heaven*	ciels, (1) *skies in pictures*; (2) *bed-testers*; (3) *climate* cieux, (1) *skies*; (2) *heavens*
4. œil	*eye*	œils-de-bœuf, *oval windows*; œils-de-chat, *precious stones* yeux, *eyes*
5. travail	*work*	travails, (1) *official reports*; (2) *shoeing-machine* travaux, *works*

171.—(6) Plural of Compound Nouns.

General Rule. Only Nouns and Adjectives are able to take the mark of the plural.

172.—*Special Rules.* The mark of the plural is given—

A. To both words, if the Compound be formed of two *Nouns*: *le chou-fleur, les choux-fleurs; le loup-garou, les loups-garous.*

Exc.	bain-marie	des bains-marie	*water-bath*
	colin-maillard	des colin-maillard	*blindman's-buff*
	Hôtel-Dieu	des Hôtels-Dieu	*hospital*
	timbre-poste	des timbres-poste	*post-mark*

B. To both words, if the Compound be formed of a *Noun* and of an *Adjective*:[1] *beau-frère, beaux-frères; grand-père, grands-pères; garde-forestier, gardes-forestiers.*

Exc.	grand'mère	grand'mères[2]	*grand* without the apostrophe always takes the *s*
	grand'messe	grand'messes	
	grand'tante	grand'tantes	
	terre-plein	terre-pleins	

C. To the first word, if the Compound be formed of two *Nouns* joined by a *Preposition*: *chef-d'œuvre, chefs-d'œuvres: arc-en-ciel, arcs-en-ciel.*

Exc.	un tête-à-tête	des tête-à-tête	*private interview*
	un coq-à-l'âne	des coq-à-l'âne	*cock-and-bull story*
	un pied-à-terre	des pied-à-terre	*resting-place*

D. To the second word,[3] if it be preceded by a *Preposition* or by an indeclinable *Prefix*: *avant-coureur, avant-coureurs; co-propriétaire, co-propriétaires; vice-roi, vice-rois.*

[1] *Demi*, although an Adjective, never takes the *s* in the plural of Compound Nouns: *un demi-dieu; des demi-dieux.*—Notice the following forms: Sing. *un cent-suisse, un cent-suisses*: Plur. *des cent-suisses*: Sing. *un chevau-léger, un chevaux-léger*; Plur. *des chevau-légers, des chevaux-légers*: Sing. *un blanc-seing*; Plur. *des blancs-seings, des blanc-seings.*

[2] On the apostrophe in these words, see *Reasons*, &c., § 349.

[3] There is much diversity of opinion among authors respecting this rule: some write—

un arrière-ban	des arrière-ban	*arrière-ban*
une après-midi	des après-midi	*afternoon*
un contre-jour	des contre-jour	*false light*
un sous-pied	des sous-pied	*strap*
un entre-sol	des entre-sol	*mezzanine*

E. To the second word, when the first is a *Verb* and the second a *Noun* :—

un tire-botte	des tire-bottes	*boot-jack*
un porte-manteau	des porte-manteaux	*portmanteau*
un porte-feuille	des porte-feuilles	*portfolio*
un garde-fou [1]	des garde-fous	*rail*
un passe-port	des passe-ports	*passport*
une garde-robe	des garde-robes	*wardrobe*
un bouche-trou	des bouche-trous	*stop-gap*

Exc.—Both words remain invariable—

(*a*) When the Noun is an *abstract Noun* :

un rabat-joie	des rabat-joie	*disappointment*
un gâte-métier	des gâte-métier	*spoil-trade*

(*b*) When the Noun is a *name of matter* :

un brise-glace	des brise-glace	*starling*
un gagne-pain	des gagne-pain	*livelihood*
un caille-lait	des caille-lait	*cheese-rennet*

(*c*) When the Noun expresses *unity* : [2]

un casse-tête	des casse-tête	*tomahawk*
un abat-vent	des abat-vent	*weather-board*
un crève-cœur	des crève-cœur	*heart-sore*
un réveil-matin	des réveil-matin	*alarum-clock*
un ayant-droit	des ayant-droit	*claimant*
un coupe-gorge	des coupe-gorge	*den of thieves*

[1] When *garde* is a Substantive and represents a person, it takes *s*, whilst the Noun following it generally takes *s*, but remains invariable when it represents *unity* :—

(*a*)	un garde-magasin	des gardes-magazins	*warehouse-man*
	une garde-malade	des gardes-malades	*sick-nurse*
(*b*)	un garde-vaisselle	des gardes-vaisselle	*silverplate-keeper*
	un garde-marine	des gardes marine	*midshipman*

[2] When the Noun expresses *plurality*, it takes the sign of the plural in both Numbers :—

un essuie-mains	des essuie-mains	*towel*
un cure-dents	des cure-dents	*tooth-pick*
un gobe-mouches	des gobe-mouches	*fly-catcher*

Remark.—No sign of the plural is added to Substantives formed of any indeclinable parts of speech :—

un passe-partout	des passe-partout	*master-key*
un pour-boire	des pour-boire	*gratuity*

173.—(7) The following Nouns have only a plural form :—

ancêtres	*ancestors*	funérailles	*funeral*
annales	*annals*	légumes	*vegetables*
confins	*confines*	lunettes	*spectacles*
dépens	*cost, charge*	mœurs	*manners*
entrailles	*bowels*	pleurs	*tears*
environs	*environs*	ténèbres	*darkness*
frais	*expenses*	vivres	*victuals*

---

aborigènes	*aboriginals*	mânes	*manes*
alentours	*neighbourhood*	mathématiques	*mathematics*
archives	*archives*	mouchettes	*snuffers*
armoiries	*coat of arms*	pénates	*household gods*
arrhes	*earnest-money*	pincettes	*tongs*
broussailles	*briars*	prémices	*first-fruits*
décombres	*rubbish*	représailles	*reprisals*
fiançailles	*betrothing*	tenailles	*pincers*
fonts	*font*	thermes	*baths*
litanies	*litanies*	vêpres	*vespers*

174.—(8) Many Substantives vary in meaning when they are used in the Singular or in the Plural :—

Singular.		Plural.	
aboi	*bark*	abois (aux abois)	*at bay*
arme	*weapon*	armes	*coat of arms*
arrêt	*judgment*	arrêts	*arrest*
ciseau	*chisel*	ciseaux	*scissors*
épingle	*pin*	épingles	*pin-money*
fer	*iron*	fers	*fetters*
gage	*pledge*	gages	*wages*
lettre	*letter*	lettres	*literature*
lunette	*telescope*	lunettes	*spectacles*
neveu	*nephew*	neveux	*descendants*

Singular.		Plural.	
défence	*defence*	défences	*tusks*
être	*being*	êtres	*parts*
faste	*pomp*	fastes	*annals*
franchise	*sincerity*	franchises	*liberties* / *immunity*
harde	*herd*	hardes	*clothes*
heure	*hour*	heures canoniales	*canonical hours*
honneur	*honour*	honneurs	*dignities*
lumière	*sight*	lumières	*knowledge*
menotte	*little hand*	menottes	*hand-cuffs*
troupe	*band*	troupes	*troops*
vacance	*vacancy*	vacances	*vacations*
veille	*watch*	veilles	*night labours*

II. Gender of Nouns.[1]

175.—*General Rule.* French masculines and feminines coincide with Latin masculines and feminines respectively; the Latin neuter gender has disappeared, most neuters becoming masculines.

176.—*Special Rules.* The gender of French Nouns may be known by the *meaning* or by the *termination.*

1. *Gender determined by the Meaning.*

177.—Masculine are—

(1) **The Names of Male Persons and Animals:** oncle, roi; lion, cheval.	*Exc.* Dupe,[2] recrue, sentinelle, victime, connaissance, flûte, bête, pratique.
(2) **The Names of Trees, Shrubs, and Metals:** bouleau; églantier; fer.[3]	*Exc.* Aubépine,[4] ronce, épine, vigne, ébène, viorne, yeuse.

[1] The principal Rules only will be given here, as this part of the Grammar has already been treated at some length in my "*Rules on French Genders.*" See also *Reasons*, &c., § 342.

[2] *Dupe, recruit, sentry, victim, acquaintance, flute-player, fool, customer.*

[3] *Birch-tree; sweet briar; iron.*

[4] *Hawthorn, briar, thorn, vine, ebony, viburn, holly.*

(3) **The Names of Days, Months, and Seasons:**
mardi ; juin ; été.

Exc. 1. La Saint-Jean (sc. *la fête de* St. J.), la Saint-Martin, la Saint-Michel, la Noël (*Noël* without the article is considered as masculine).

Exc. 2. La mi-août, la mi-juin, &c. ; *the 15th of August, of June*, &c.

(4) **The Names of Winds and Parts of the Heavens:**
le zéphir, le sud.

Exc. Mousson,[1] brise, bise, tramontane.

(5) **The Names of Mountains:**
le Vésuve, le Mont-Blanc.

Exc. The names of mountains used in the plural are *fem.: les Alpes, les Andes.*

(6) **All Infinitives, Adjectives, and uninflected parts of speech taken substantively:**
le manger, le blanc, le non.

Exc. L'écarlate, *scarlet.*

(7) **The Names of Countries,[2] Towns, and Rivers[3] ending in a consonant or in a vowel, except *e* mute.**
Portugal, Dauphiné ; Paris ; Rhin.

Exc. 1. Albion, Franche-Comte.
2. Athènes, Babel, Ilion, Jérusalem, Naples, Tyr, Trèves.
3. Lahn, Lys, Neiss, Theiss, Tweed.

178.—Feminine are—

(1) **The Names of Female Persons and Animals:**
femme, tante ; poule, lionne.

(2) **The Names of Arts and Sciences, Virtues and Vices:**
Peinture ; chimie ; modestie.

Exc. le vice, égoisme, courage

[1] *Monsoon, breeze, north-wind, tramontane (north-wind).*
[2] On the Names of Countries, &c., ending in *e* mute, see No. 3 of the Fem. Genders.
[3] Names of Rivers ending in *a* are *feminine:* la Duna, la Néva, &c. (*except* e Volga, le Parana, le Xamara.)

(3) **The Names of Countries, Towns,[1] and Rivers ending in *e* mute:**
France; **Rome**;[2] Marne.
(*On the Names of Countries, &c., ending in a consonant, see above, No.* 7.)

Exc. 1. Le Bengale, Maine, Mexique, Hanovre, Péloponnèse, *and all names in* shire (Yorkshire, &c.)
Exc. 2. Le Caire, le Hâvre.
Exc. 3. Le Borysthène, Danube, Ébre, Euphrate, Gange, Rhône, Tage, Tibre, Tigre.

2. *Gender determined by the Termination.*

179.—*General Rule.* French Nouns are—

a. **Masculine when they end in a Consonant, in a Diphthong, or in a Vowel, except mute *e*;**

b. **Feminine when they end in *e* mute.**

180.—*Special Rules.* Masculine are—

(1) **All Nouns ending in B,[3] C, D, G; H, K, L, P; Q, Y, and Z.**

(2) **All Nouns in X.**
Exc. chaux,[4] faux, perdrix, croix, paix, poix, toux, noix, voix.

(3) **Nouns in -AGE when this Suffix is derived from *Lat. -aticum* or *Low Lat. -agium*:**
le voyage (*viaticum*), le courage (*coragium*).
Fem. are therefore—
cage,[5] rage, image, page, nage, plage, ambages.
as their Latin types are: caveam, rabiem, imaginem, &c.

[1] Authors not unfrequently give the *Fem.* Gender to the names of towns ending in a consonant or in a full vowel sound; *ville* must then be supplied. *Moscow* and *Smolensk*, for instance, are used as Fem. Nouns by Ségur.
[2] When the name of a town is used figuratively for its population, it takes the *Masc.* Gender: *Tout Rome le sait.*
[3] Why are Nouns ending in *b, c, d,* &c., Masculine? See my treatise, "*Rules on French Genders.*"
[4] *Lime, scythe, partridge, cross, peace, pitch, cough, nut, voice.*
[5] *Cage, rage, image, page, swimming, beach, circumlocution.*

(4) **Names in** -ÉGE, *Lat.* -*egium*:
le collége, le piége.

(5) **All Nouns in** -É (*not* -*té*):
le clergé, le négligé.

Exc. A small number of names of persons in é: Danaé, Niobé, Psyché, &c.

(6) **The following Nouns in** -TÉ:
comité,[1] comté, traité, pâté, thé, côte, été, aparté, arrêté.

N.B.—*All other Nouns in* -té *are Fem.*: la bonté, la vicomté.—See below, No. 1.

(7) **Nouns in** -LE **and** -RE **preceded by a consonant and Nouns in** -CLE, *Lat.* -*culus*, -*culum*:
verre, chiffre, sable, seigle, trouble; article, miracle.

Exc. la terre, *earth*; la serre, *green-house*; l'huître, *oyster*.

(8) **All Nouns in** -ASME (-ÂME) **and** -ISME (-ÎME), *Lat.* -*asmus*, -*ismus*: *Gr.* -ισμος:
enthousiasme, patriotisme.

(9) **Nouns in** -IME **and** -UME, **when they are derived from Latin neuters in** -*imen*, -*umen*:
crime (*crimen*), volume (*volumen*).

Nouns in -ume *are Fem. when they are formed from Latin* -udinem: amertume (*amaritudinem*), coutume (*consuetudinem*), enclume (*incudinem*), écume (*Old H. Germ. scûm*).

(10) **Nouns in** -ISTE, *Lat.* -*ista*, *Gr.* -ιστης:
annaliste, artiste.

N.B.—This termination is sometimes applied also to Fem. Nouns.

(11) **Nouns in** -ÔME (-OME), -ÊME, -ÈME:
fantôme, atome, baptême.

[1] *Committee, county, treaty, pastry, tea, side, summer, aside, resolution.*

(12) **All Nouns in—**	
A	*Exc.* sépia, véranda, villa, camarilla.
I[1]	*Exc.* merci,[2] fourmi, paroi, loi, après-midi, foi.
O	*Exc.* virago.
U *or* -EAU	*Exc.* vertu,[3] bru, peau, tribu, glu, eau.
F	*Exc.* clef, nef, soif.[4]
M	*Exc.* faim, *hunger.*
N (for those in çon, &c., see below)	*Exc.* main, *hand;* fin, *end.*
R (for those in eur, see below)	*Exc.* cour, tour, mer,[5] chair *and* cuiller.
S	*Exc.* pampas,[6] oasis, brebis, cortès, fois, vis, souris.
T	*Exc.* mort,[7] part, plupart, jument, nuit, forêt, dot, dent, gent.
Feminine are—	
(1) **Abstract Nouns in -té,** *Lat. -tas:* piété, bonté, cité.	*Exc.* see p. 112, No. 6.
(2) **Nouns in -EUR,** *Lat. or, os:* douleur, fleur, vapeur.	*Exc.* heur,[8] bonheur, malheur,[9] honneur, déshonneur. chœur,[10] cœur, équateur, labeur, pleurs, moteur, vapeur.

[1] Why are Nouns ending in *i, u, eau,* &c., Masculine? See my treatise, "*Rules on French Genders.*

[2] *Mercy, ant, wall* (*side*), *law, afternoon, faith.*

[3] *Virtue, daughter-in-law, skin, tribe, glue, water.*

[4] *Key, nave, thirst.*

[5] *Yard, tower, sea, flesh, spoon.*

[6] *Pampas, oasis, sheep, Cortes, time, screw, mouse.*

[7] *Death, share, the majority, mare, night, forest, dowry, tooth, people.*

[8] *Good fortune, happiness, misfortune, honour, disgrace.*

[9] Properly speaking, *heur* (Lat. augurium), *bonheur, malheur* (bonum, malum, augurium), not being derived from Latin words in *or,* do not belong to this class.

[10] *Choir, heart, equator, labour tears, mower, steam-boat.*

(3) **The greater part of Nouns in -ÇON, -SON, -ION**; *Lat. io, sio:*
façon, maison, nation, réunion.

Exc.
bastion,[1] champion, million, pion,
blason, oison, poison, camion,
poisson,[2] soupçon, tison, scorpion,
poinçon, hameçon, gabion, lampion.

(4) **The greater part of Nouns terminating in *e* mute, especially when the *e* is preceded by another vowel or by a diphthong:**
armée, haie, pluie.

Exc.
amphibie,[3] génie, apogée,
incendie, foie, élysée,
parapluie,[4] lycée, coryphée,
musée, trophée, colisée.

181.—Nouns in *e* mute, including those mentioned in §180 (1—12), amount to almost 10,000, of which about 7,000 are feminine. Long practice and constant attention alone will enable the student to know the right gender of *this* class of Substantives.

III. Additional Remarks on the Gender of Nouns.

182.—*A. Nouns of Two Genders.*

(1) Aigle, *Eagle,*

Masculine.	*Feminine.*
(1) In the sense of *male eagle.*	(1) When it means a *female eagle.*
(2) When it is used figuratively, *e.g.* a *man of genius.*	(2) When it is used in the sense of *standard.*
(3) When it stands for the *Order of the Eagle.*	

Examples. L'aigle est *courageux;* l'aigle *blanc* de Pologne; les aigles *romaines.*

[1] *Bastion, champion, million, pawn, coat-of-arms, gosling, poison, dray.*
[2] *Fish, suspicion, fire-brand, scorpion, bodkin, fish-hook, gabion, lamp.*
[3] *Amphibious animal, genius, highest pitch, fire, liver, Elysium.*
[4] *Umbrella, lyceum, coryphæus (leader), museum, trophy, Coliseum.*

(2) Amour, délice,[1] orgue,[2] *Love, delight, organ,*

Masculine.	*Feminine.*
When they are used in the Singular.	When they are used in the Plural.

Examples. Son amour *paternel;* il n'est point d'*éternelles* amours; c'est *un grand* délice; *toutes* les délices du Paradis; *un* orgue *puissant;* des orgues *puissantes.*

N.B.—*Délice* and *orgue* are Masculine in the Plural after the expression *un de:* un de mes plus *grands* délices (*Rousseau*); un des plus *beaux* orgues de l'Italie.

(3) Automne, *Autumn,*

Masculine.	*Feminine.*
In ordinary style.	In poetic language.

Examples. Un *bel* automne; *un* automne triste; un automne fort *sec.*

(4) Chose, *Thing,*

Masculine.	*Feminine.*
When it means *something* in the expression *quelque chose;*[3]	When it means *a thing*, or *whatever thing*, (quelque chose; in this case the Verb following it must be in the Subjunctive).

Examples. C'est *une bonne* chose; quelque chose est *changé* ici; s'il t'en reste quelque chose cache-*le;* quelque chose que je lui ai *dite*, je n'ai pas réussi à le convaincre.

[1] The Latin Neuter *delicium*, which occurs in some Latin writers, has probably given rise to the French Masc. *le délice*, whilst the Fem. *les délices* is regularly derived from the Fem. Plur. *deliciæ.*

[2] *Orgue* is Masc. in the Sing., because it is derived from the Neuter *organum;* the Plural *orgues* is Fem., because *organa*, the Plural of *organum*, was wrongly taken to be a Noun of the Fem. Gender.

[3] If an Adjective accompanies *something*, it is placed after *quelque chose* and connected with it by *de:* something good = *quelque chose de bon.*

(5) Couple, *Couple*,

Masculine.	*Feminine.*
(1) When it means husband and wife, or the male and female of animals. (2) When we speak of two persons united by a similarity of temper and sentiment.	When it is used in the sense of *a brace, two of a sort.*

Examples. Ce fut *un heureux* couple; *un* couple de fripons, d'amis, d'amants; *un* couple de pigeons; *une* couple d'œufs; *une* couple de pigeons.

(6) Enfant, *Child*,

Masculine.	*Feminine.*
When it refers to a boy. N.B.—In the Plural, *enfant* is always Masc.	When it refers to a girl.

Examples. Cet enfant n'est pas heureux; c'est *une jolie* enfant; Marie et Louise viennent d'étudier avec leurs amies, *tous* ces enfants sont très *attentifs.*

(7) Foudre, *Lightning*,

Masculine.	*Feminine.*
In a figurative sense.	In its proper sense of *lightning, thunderbolt.*

Examples. Un foudre de guerre, *a great warrior;* un foudre d'éloquence, *a great orator;* les vains foudres de Rome (*excommunications*); il fut frappé de la foudre.

(8) Gens, *People*,

Is a Substantive Masc. Plur.;[1] yet any Adjective of two terminations takes the Fem. form when it immediately precedes *gens:* if such an Adjective be *immediately* preceded by another *Adjective*,

[1] The Singular of *les gens* is *la gent* (nation, tribe).

the *Indefinite Article*, or by *tout*, these words also take the Fem. Gender.

N.B.—Any compound forms, as *gens de lettres*, *gens d'affaires*, &c., are always Masculine.

Examples. Ces gens sont *soupçonneux ; instruits* par l'expérience *toutes* les *vieilles gens* sont *soupçonneux*, *ils* ne croient plus personne ; *certaines heureuses* gens ; *quelles sottes* gens ! *quels* sont ces gens ? *tous* les *honnêtes* gens ; *tous* les gens de bien ; *certains honnêtes* gens.

(9) Œuvre, *Work*,[1]

Masculine.	*Feminine.*
In the sense of the *work* of a *musician* or of an *engraver*.	In its general meaning *work*, *action*, *deed*.

Examples. J'ai *le* premier œuvre de Händel ; il a acheté *tout* l'œuvre de Dürer ; l'œuvre de la création fut *achevée* en six jours ; les œuvres *complètes* de Racine.

(10) Orge, *Barley*,

Masculine.	*Feminine*
In the two expressions *orge perlé*, pearl barley, and *orge mondé*, hulled barley.	In all cases except *orge perlé* and *orge mondé*.

Examples. De *belles* orges ; les orges sont *levées*.

(11) Pâques,[2] *Easter*,

Masculiue.	*Feminine.*
In ordinary style.	In a small number of expressions : Faire de bonnes Pâques, *to receive the Sacrament ;* Pâques fleuries ; *Palm-Sunday*.

Examples. J'irai le voir à Pâques *prochain ;* quand Pâques sera *venu*.

[1] The great work of Alchimy, *i.e.* the philosopher's stone, is called *le grand œuvre*.

[2] La "Pâque" is the festival of the Jews : les Juifs célèbrent la Pâque.

(12) Période, *Period*,

Masculine.	*Feminine.*
When it means the *highest point, pitch*, or *length of time.*	When it means *period* (whether in *astronomy, chronology*, or *grammar*).

Examples. Au plus haut période de la gloire; il porta l'éloquence à *son plus haut* période; dans *le dernier* période de sa vie.—*La* période solaire, *the solar period; la* période Julienne, *the Julian period; cette* période est trop *longue, this phrase, or period, is too long.*

183.—*B. Nouns which change their Gender when their Meaning changes.*[1]

	Masc.	Fem.
aide	*assistant*	assistance
*aune	*alder-tree*	ell
cornette	*cornet* (*officer*)	standard
crêpe	*crape*	pancake
enseigne	*midshipman*	standard
exemple	*example*	writing-copy
fourbe	*deceiver*	deception
garde	*keeper*	gard
greffe	*record office*	graft
guide	*guide*	bridle
hymne	*song*	church hymn
*livre	*book*	pound
manche	*handle*	sleeve
manœuvre	*workman*	working
mémoire	*bill*	memory

[1] In many cases the distinctions which have been made between these words purely rest on custom, or, what is worse, on the whims of grammarians. Yet the difference in gender and meaning of a great number of these Nouns is to be found in the fact that they are derived from two quite different etyma, which, by gradual changes, have come to take the same form in French. The following are the original forms of the Nouns marked thus (*) in the list:—

Masc. or Neut.	Fem.	Masc. or Neut.	Fem.
alnus	*alena*	pensile	*patella*
liber	*libra*	posto	*posita* (*sc. statio*)
modulus	*muscula*	somnus	*summa*
mozzo (*It.*)	*mos* (*Old H.Germ.*)	subrid-ere	*sorex*
παιδίον (?)	*pagina*	torn-are	*turris*
palmus	*palma*	vagus (Adj.)	*woge* (*Germ.*)
parallelon	*parallela* (*sc. linea*)	vasum*	*vase* (*A.-Sax.*)

	Masc.	Fem.
merci	*thanks*	mercy
mode	*mood*	fashion
*moule	*mould*	mussel
*mousse	*midshipman*	moss
office	*office, duty*	pantry
*page	*page*	page (in a book)
paillasse	*down*	mattress
*palme	*handbreadth*	palm
pantomime	*actor*	pantomimic art
*parallèle	*comparison*	parallel line
pendule	*pendulum*	time-piece
personne	*nobody*	a person
pique	*spade (cards)*	pike
*poêle	*stone*	frying-pan
*poste	*post*	post (letters)
relâche	*respite*	harbour
remise	*carriage*	remittance / coach-house
solde	*balance of accounts*	pay of soldiers
*somme	*slumber*	sum
*souris	*smile*	mouse
*tour	*turn, trick*	tower
triomphe	*triumph*	trump (cards)
*vague	*uncertainty*	wave
*vase	*vase*	mud
voile	*veil*	sail

184.—*C. Nouns of Common Gender.*

Artiste, camarade, élève, esclave, patriote, pupille, adversaire, pensionnaire, auteur, guide, peintre, poëte, témoin, écrivain, &c.

Examples. Cet élève a obtenu tous les prix; les élèves ont été attentives aujourd'hui; cette femme est un dangereux adversaire; elle est un bon témoin.

185.—*D. Masculine Nouns become Feminine when they take a Feminine termination.*

(1) **e** is added to the Masculine form :—

marchand *marchande* | ami *amie*

(2) **e** or **é** is changed into **esse** :— [1]

abbé	*abbesse*	maître	*maîtresse*
âne	*ânesse*	nègre	*négresse*
chanoine	*chanoinesse*	prince	*princesse*
comte	*comtesse*	prophète	*prophétesse*
druide	*druidesse*	tigre .	*tigresse*
hôte	*hôtesse*	traître	*traîtresse*

(3) **at, et, ot, on, ien, yen, éen,** double the end consonant and add **e** :— [2]

chat	*chatte*	chrétien	*chrétienne*
minet	*minette*	Troyen	*Troyenne*
linot	*linotte*	Européen	*Européenne*
baron	*baronne*		

(4) **ine** marks the Fem. Gender of the following Nouns :—

héros, *héroïne ;* czar, *czarine ;* Philippe, *Philippine.*

(5) Notice the following forms :—

bailli	*baillive*	dindon	*dinde*
canard	*cane*	loup	*louve*
compagnon	*compagne*	mulet	*mule*, &c.

Remark.—Most Substantives form their Feminine like the Adjectives : for those ending in *f* and *x*, see § 187, No. 1 ; in *eur* and *teur*, see § 187, Nos. 7 and 8.

[1] The following Nouns also form their Feminine in *esse* :—

Dieu	*déesse*	doge	*dogaresse*
devin	*devineresse**	larron	*larronnesse*
duc	*duchesse*	pair	*pairesse*

[2] Most Nouns in *an* simply add *e* in order to form their Feminine : anglican, *anglicane ;* persan, *persane ;* only a few double the *n* before the addition of *e :* paysan, *paysanne ;* Jean, *Jeanne.*

---

* *Devineresse* means *conjurer*, whilst *devineuse* (which is the *Feminine* of *devineur*) means *guetser.*

CHAPTER IV.—ADJECTIVES (ADJECTIFS.)

I. Formation of the Feminine.[1]

186.—*General Rule.* Adjectives form their Feminine by adding *e* mute to the Masculine termination, but they do not change if they end in an *e* mute :—

grand, *grande;* joli, *jolie;* sensé, *sensée.*
un homme *habile,* une femme *habile.*

187.—*Special Rules.* Adjectives ending

(1) In **f** and **x**,[2] change these letters into **ve** and **se** respectively:—

actif, *active;* heureux, *heureuse.*

Except.	doux	douce	*sweet*
	faux[3]	fausse	*false*
	préfix	préfixe	*appointed*
	roux	rousse	*red* (*of hair*)
	vieux	vieille	*old*
	brief	briève	*short* ⟩ on the grave ac-
	bref	brève	*short* ⟩ *cent,* see No. 4.

[1] See *Reasons and Illustrations,* §§ 348—353.
[2] See *ibid.,* § 351 (A).
[3] See *ibid.,* § 351 (note).

(2) In **g** and **c**, change these letters into **gue** and **que**[1] respectively :—

long, *longue*;[2] public, *publique.*

Except.	grec[3]	grecque	*Greek*
	sec[4]	sèche	*dry*
	blanc[4]	blanche	*white*
	franc[4]	franche	*free*

Obs. 1. *Franc* has *franque* in the Fem. when it means *Frank* or *Frankish : la langue franque.*

(3) In **as**,[5] **ais**;[5] **eil, el, es**,[5] **et**;[6] **ien**; **on, os**,[5] **ot**;[6] **ul**,[5] double their final consonant and add *e* :—

gras, *grasse*; muet, *muette*; sot, *sotte.*

Except.	ras	rase	*smooth*
	frais	fraîche	*fresh*
	mauvais	mauvaise	*bad*
	niais	niaise	*silly*
	complet[6]	complète	*complete*
	concret	concrète	*concrete*
	discret	discrète	*discreet*
	inquiet	inquiète	*anxious*
	prêt	prête	*ready*
	replet	replète	*stout*
	secret	secrète	*secret*
	cagot	cagote	*bigot*
	dévot	dévote	*devout*
	idiot	idiote	*idiotic*

Obs. Adjectives in *ès* lose their accent in the Fem. Gender : *profès*,[5] *professe*; *exprès*,[5] *expresse.*

[1] See *Reasons and Illustrations*, § 352 (note 1).
[2] Adjectives in *gu* take *ë* in the Feminine (the pronunciation remains unchanged):—
aigu, *aiguë*; ambigu, *ambiguë.*
[3] See *Reasons and Illustrations*, § 352 (note 2).
[4] See *ibid.*, § 352.
[5] See *ibid.*, § 351 (B).
[6] See *ibid.*, § 353 (A).

(4) In **er**, and, generally speaking, all Adjectives the final consonant of which is preceded by an unaccented *e* (see the *Except.* in No. 3), take the grave accent on the *e* and add *e* mute :— [1]

amer, *amère ;* fier, *fière ;* discret, *discrète.*

(5) Notice the Fem. of the following Adjectives :— [2]

coi	coite	*quiet*
favori	favorite	*favourite*
bénin	bénigne	*benign*
malin	maligne	*malicious*
absous	absoute	*acquitted*
dissous	dissoute	*dissolved*
tiers	tierce	*third*
gentil	gentille	*pretty*

(6) Five Adjectives have a second form of the Masc. which is used before Nouns beginning with a vowel or an *h* mute :— [3]

Masc.		Fem.	
beau	bel	belle	*fine*
nouveau	nouvel	nouvelle	*new*
fou	fol	folle	*foolish*
mou	mol	molle	*soft*
vieux	vieil	vieille	*old*

Obs. 1. *Jumeau*, twin, has *jumelle* in the Fem.

Obs. 2. *Plusieurs* is both Masc. and Fem.

Obs. 3. We may say *vieux ami* and *vieil ami ; vieux homme* and *vieil homme ;* this latter form in the Scriptural sense, *sinner.*

Obs. 4. *Dû* and *crû*, Past Participles of *devoir* and *croître*, lose the circumflex accent in the Feminine : *due, crue.*

(7) Adjectives ending in **eur** (and Substantives in

[1] See *Reasons and Illustrations*, § 353 (B).
[2] See *ibid.*, § 351 (D). [3] See *ibid.*, § 351 (C).

eur used adjectively) form their Fem. in four different ways :—

a. By adding **e** : all Adjectives in **érieur** and those derived from Latin Comparatives in **eur** :—

antérieur	antérieure	*anterior*
majeur	majeure	*most important*

b. By changing **eur** into **euse** : all those Adjectives which can be formed from a Present Participle by changing **ant** into **eur** :—

Pres. Part.	Masc.	Fem.
flatt-ant	flatt-eur	flatt-euse
dans-ant	dans-eur	dans-euse
Except. 1. inventeur	inventrice	*inventor*
exécuteur	executrice	*executor*
inspecteur	inspectrice	*inspector*
persécuteur	persecutrice	*persecutor*
gouverneur	gouvernante	*governor*
débiteur	débiteuse	*spreader, retailer*
	débitrice	*debtor*
procureur	procureuse	*attorney*
	procuratrice	*proxy*
chanteur	chanteuse	*singer*
	cantatrice	*high-class professional singer*
Except. 2. bailleur [1]	bailleresse	*lessor*
chasseur	chasseuse	*hunter*
	chasseresse	(*in poetry*)
défendeur	défenderesse	*defendant*
demandeur	demandeuse	*asker*
	demanderesse	*plaintiff*
enchanteur	enchanteresse	*enchanter*
pécheur [2]	pécheresse	*sinner*
vendeur	vendeuse	*seller*
	venderesse	*vendor* (*law*)
vengeur	vengeresse	*avenger*

c. By changing **eur** into **eresse** : all those Adjectives which form the second exception to Rule *b.*

[1] Bailleur, *yawner*, has in the Fem. *bailleuse*.
[2] Pêcheur, *fisherman*, has *pêcheuse* in the Fem.

d. By changing **teur** into **trice**: the Adjectives belonging to this class are derived from Latin words in **tor**, Fem. **trix**—

acteur	**actrice**	*actor*
créateur	**créatrice**	*creator*
bienfaiteur	**bienfaitrice**	*benefactor*

(8) The following Adjectives have an irregular form:—

ambassadeur	**ambassadrice**	*ambassador*
empereur	**impératrice**	*emperor*
serviteur	**servante**	*servant*

(9) Adjectives and Substantives expressing *trades, professions*, &c., generally followed by men, do not change even when they are applied to women:—

Graveur (*engraver*), docteur (*doctor*), auteur (*author*), traducteur (*translator*), peintre (*painter*), &c.: *e.g.* une femme auteur, *a female author;* elle était *un poète* admirable.

Obs. Poétesse, *a female poet*, is seldom used.

(10) *Defective Adjectives.*

a. Adjectives used with **Masc.** Nouns only:

châtain	*nutbrown*	dispos	*nimble*
fat	*coxcomb*	aquilin	*aquiline*
résous	*solved*	vélin	*vellum*

b. Adjectives used with Fem. Nouns only:

crasse	*gross*	cursive	*cursive*
romane	*romance*	plénière	*full*

Obs. 1. *Châtain* is sometimes used in the Fem. *châtaine; hébreu* has generally *hébreue; hébraïque* is used only in *grammaire hébraïque, la langue hébraïque, le culte hébraïque, les mœurs hébraïques.*

Obs. 2. *Grognon*, grumbling, and *témoin*, witness, are used both for the Masc. and the Fem.

II. Formation of the Plural.

188.—*General Rule.* Adjectives form their plural like Substantives by adding *s* to the singular: *joli, jolis; jolie, jolies; grand, grands; grande, grandes.*

Except. Tout, Fem. *toute*, has in the Plural *tous*, Fem. *toutes.*

189.—*Special Rules.* The Plural of Adjectives is also formed—

(1) By adding *x* to those ending in *au* and *eu*: *beau, beaux, hébreu, hébreux.*

Except. Bleu, *blue*, and feu, *lately deceased*, take *s.*

(2) By changing into *aux* the termination *al*:[1] *égal, égaux; brutal, brutaux.*

Except. Some Adjectives in *al* take *s*:—

amical[2]	colossal	ducal	fatal	
final	frugal	glacial	initial	
matinal	nasal	natal	naval	théatral[3]

And

austral	boréal	bancal	doctoral
jovial	labial	lingual	médial
oval	paschal	pénal	virginal

Obs. Adjectives in *ant* and *ent* better keep the end *-t* in the Plural: *charmants* instead of *charmans.*

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., §§ 354—356.

[2] Many writers use even these Adjectives in *aux*, as: *fruganx, ducaux, nataux, austraux.*

[3] The following Adjectives are generally used with Fem. Nouns only:—

bénéficial	canonial	collégial	crucial
diagonal	diamétral	expérimental	médicinal
mental	patronal	transversal	vocal

(3) Plural of Compound Adjectives.

A. General Rules.

a. When one of the Adjectives serves to qualify the other, the second Adjective only takes the mark of the plural :—[1]

Sing.	Plur.	
clair-semé	clair-semés	*thin-sown*
court-vêtu	court-vêtus	*short-coated*
demi-mort	demi-morts	*half-dead*

b. When both Adjectives serve to qualify the Noun, both take the mark of the plural :—[2]

Masc. Sing.	Masc. Plur.	Fem. Plur.	
aigre-doux	aigres-doux	aigres-douces	*between sweet and sour*
frais-cueilli	frais-cueillis	fraîches-cueillies	*freshly gathered*
ivre-mort	ivres-morts	ivres-mortes	*dead-drunk*

B. Special Rules.—Compound Adjectives of *Colour*.

a. When one of the Adjectives serves to qualify the other, both remain unchanged : des cheveux châtain-clair (*light brown*) ; des robes bleu-foncé (*dark blue*).

b. When both Adjectives serve to qualify the Noun, both agree with the Noun in Number and Gender : des étoffes bleues claires, i.e. *fabrics blue in colour and light in texture.*

Obs. Adjectives of *Colour* remain invariable when they are derived from Substantives :—

des gants paille	*straw-coloured gloves*
des robes ponceau	*flame-coloured dresses*

[1] If *nouveau* be one of the terms of the Compound Adjective, it sometimes changes and sometimes remains invariable ; thus : Sing. *nouveau-né, nouveau-née ;* Plur. *nouveau-nés :* Sing. *nouveau-marié, nouvelle-mariée* Plur. *nouveaux-mariés, nouvelles-mariées.*

[2] *All-powerful* has in the Sing. *tout-puissant*, Fem. *toute-puissante ;* in the Plur. *tout-puissants, toutes-puissantes.*

III. Comparison of Adjectives.[1]

190.—(1) The Comparative of an Adjective is formed by placing **plus**, *more*, or **moins**, *less*, before the Positive, and the Superlative[2] by putting the Definite Article before the Comparative :—

	Positive.	Comparative.	Superlative.
Masc.	grand	plus grand	le plus grand
Fem.	grande	plus grande	la plus grande
Masc.	sage	moins sage	le moins sage
Fem.	sage	moins sage	la moins sage

191.—(2) The following Adjectives have two different forms for the Comparative and Superlative :—[3]

	Positive.	Comparative.	Superlative.
bon	*good*	meilleur	le meilleur
	simple-minded	plus bon	le plus bon
mauvais	*wicked*	pire	le pire
	bad	plus mauvais	le plus mauvais
petit	*small*	moindre	le moindre
	small (*in size*)	plus petit	le plus petit

192.—(3) The Adverbs of the preceding Adjectives form their Comparatives and Superlatives in the following manner :—

	Positive.	Comparative.	Superlative.
	bien *well*	mieux	le mieux
	mal *badly*	pis / plus mal	le pis / le plus mal
	peu *little*	moins	le moins
and :	beaucoup *much*	plus	le plus

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 357.

[2] Some Superlatives in *issime* (from Lat. *issimus*) are still used as titles : *sérénissime, éminentissime, révérendissime ;* or, in colloquial and familiar language, *savantissime, rarissime ; quelques richissimes bourgeois* (Ed. About).

[3] See *Reasons*, &c., § 358.

193.—(4) *Additional Remarks.*

a. When the Adjective follows the Noun, the Definite Article must be repeated; thus, either: *le plus heureux soldat*, or *le soldat le plus heureux.*

b. After a Comparative, *than* is expressed by *que*:—

Il est plus heureux *que* sage	*he is more fortunate* than *wise.*

c. *Plus* or *moins* must be repeated before every Adjective:—

Il est *plus* content et *plus* sage qu'un roi	*he is happier and wiser than a king*

d. Translate *as...as* by *aussi...que*, and *not so...as* by *pas si...que*:—

Ce jardin est *aussi* grand *que* le vôtre, *this garden is* as *large* as *yours*; il n'est pas *si* heureux *que* vous, *he is* not so *happy* as *you.*

e. The Definite Article is not used when the Adjective in the Superlative[1] is preceded by a Possessive Adjective: *mon, ton, son*, &c.:—

le plus grand chagrin	the *greatest sorrow*
mon plus grand chagrin	my *greatest sorrow*

f. The Superlative Absolute is formed by placing before the Adjective *bien, fort, très, extrêmement, infiniment*, &c.:—

Il est *bien* heureux; c'est *extrêmement* dangereux.

g. *In* after the Superlative is to be translated by *de*:—

C'est la plus belle maison *de* Manchester, *this is the finest house* in *Manchester.*

[1] Some Adjectives do not admit of a comparison: *aîné, puîné, premier, dernier, éternel, principal, immortel, unique, infini, immense, parfait, divin*, &c.

CHAPTER V.—PRONOUNS (PRONOMS).[1]

194.—Most Pronouns are either—

Conjunctive, *i.e.* immediately preceding or following the Verb: il donne; il lui donnait; donnait-il; or

Disjunctive, *i.e.* used independently of a Verb or separated from it by other words: Qui frappe? *moi;* il travaille pour *lui.*

I. Personal Pronouns (Pronoms Personnels).[2]

195.—*A. Conjunctive.*

Singular.

	1st Person.		2nd Person.		3rd Person. Masc.		3rd Person. Fem.	
Nom.	je	*I*	tu	*thou*	il	*he, it*	elle	*she*
Dat.	me	*to me*	te	*to thee*	lui	*to him, it*	lui	*to her*
Acc.	me	*me*	te	*thee*	le	*him, it*	la	*her*

Plural.

Nom.	nous	*we*	vous	*you*	ils	*they*	elles	*they*
Dat.	nous	*to us*	vous	*to you*	leur	*to them*	leur	*to them*
Acc.	nous	*us*	vous	*you*	les	*them*	les	*them*

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 360.

[2] See *ibid.* § 361.

196.—*a.* The *Genitive* Singular and Plural of this Pronoun (*of me, of thee*, &c.; *of us, of you*, &c.) is wanting; it is supplied by the Genitive of Personal Disjunctive Pronouns (see § 200) :—

Il parlait *de moi* et *de lui*	*he was speaking* of me *and* of him

b. As to the 3rd Person Singular and Plural of this Pronoun, its Genitive may be expressed by *en* (= *of him, her, it, them*), its Dative by *y* (= *to him, her, it, them*). Like the other Personal Pronouns, they are placed before the Verb, but after any other Pronouns, *y* always preceding *en* :—

Il *en* parla	*he spoke* of it (him, her, them)
Je vous *y en* donnerai	*I shall give* you there of it (them)
Il m'*y* mena	*he took* me there

197.—The *a* of *la* and the *e* of *je, me, te, se, le*, must be elided before any Verb beginning with a vowel or a silent *h* :—

Je t'entends (te), je l'admire (= le and la).

198.—The *Reflective* Pronoun is—

	1st Person.		2nd Person.		3rd Person.	
Sing.	me	*myself*	te	*thyself*	se	*himself, herself, itself*
Plur.	nous	*ourselves*	vous	*yourselves*	se	*themselves*

Je *me* défends	*I defend* myself
Il *se* loue	*he praises* himself
Elles *se* trompent	*they deceive* themselves

199.—*Place* of the Personal Pronouns.

a. The *Nominatives* are placed before the Verb, except in questions and in parenthetical sentences :—

Il croit ; *vous* ne voyez pas ; croit-il ; 'me voilà,' dit-il.

b. The *Datives* and *Accusatives* also precede the Verb, and in compound tenses its auxiliary, but they follow the negative *ne* if the Verb be used negatively :—

Il *lui* écrit	*he writes* to him
Elle *l'*a frappé	*she has beaten* him
Vous ne *lui* avez pas répondu	*you have not answered* him
Nous *les* voyons	*we see* them

Note.—If the *interrogative* form were to be given to these sentences, the only change to be made would be to place the *subject* after the Verb : *lui écrit*-il ? *l'a-t*-elle *frappé ? ne lui avez*-vous *pas répondu ? Les voyons*-nous ? (See § 71).

c. The *Datives* and *Accusatives* are placed before the *Imperative* used *negatively*, and after this mood when it is used *affirmatively* :— [1]

Ne *le* (*les*) punis pas	*do not punish* him (*them*)
Punis-*le*,[2] or punis-*les*	*punish* him (them)
Ne *lui* prêtez pas ce crayon	*do not lend* him *this pencil*
Prêtez-*lui* ce couteau	*lend* him *this pencil*
Ecris-*moi* bientôt	*write* to me *soon*

d. If the Verb be preceded by *two* Personal Pronouns, the one being in a *Dative*, the other in an *Accusative* case, their order is as follows :—

The Datives	me	*to me*	stand before the Accusatives	le	*him, it*
	te	*to thee*		la	*they, it*
	se	*to him*		les	*them*
	nous	*to us*			
	vous	*to you*			

but

The Accusatives	le	*him, it*	stand before the Datives	lui	*to him, to her*
	la	*her, it*		and	
	les	*them*		leur	*to them*

[1] In this case *me* and *te* are changed into *moi* and *toi*, except when they are followed by *en* : ne *me* trompez pas, *do not deceive me* ; donnez-*moi* ce canif, *give me this pen-knife* ; donnez-m'en assez, *give me enough of it*.

[2] The Pronoun or Pronouns which follow the Imperative immediately must be connected with this mood by a hyphen : donnez-lui ; prêtez-le-lui.

Il me *le* donne	*he gives* it *me*
Il *le* lui donne	*he gives* it *him*
Nous vous *les* donnerons	*we shall give* them *to you*
Nous *les* lui donnerons	*we shall give* them *to him*
Ne me *le* dis pas	*do not tell* it (*to*) *me*

e. If the Imperative be used affirmatively, the Pronouns must, according to No. *c*, be placed after it, and, in this case, the *Accusatives le, la, les always* precede not only the Datives *lui* and *leur*, but also the Datives *moi, toi, nous, vous* :— [1]

Ecris-*le-lui*	*write* it to him
Ecris-*le-nous*	*write* it to us
Prêtez-*la-moi*	*lend* it (to) me
Prêtez-*la-leur*	*lend* it (to) them
Dis-le-moi	*tell* it (to) me

200.—*B. Disjunctive.*

Singular.

	1st Person.		2nd Person.		3rd Person.			
Nom.	moi	*I*	toi	*thou*	lui	*he*	elle	*she*
Gen.	de moi	*of me*	de toi	*of thee*	de lui (en)	*of him*	d'elle (en)	*of her*
Dat.	à moi	*to me*	à toi	*to thee*	à lui	*to him*	à elle	*to her*
Acc.	moi	*me*	toi	*thee*	lui	*him*	elle	*her*

Plural.

Nom.	nous	*we*	vous	*you*	eux	*they*	elles	*they*
Gen.	de nous	*of us*	de vous	*of you*	d'eux (en)	*of them*	d'elles (en)	*of them*
Dat.	à nous	*to us*	à vous	*to you*	à eux	*to them*	à elles	*to them*
Acc.	nous	*us*	vous	*you*	eux	*them*	elles	*them*

201.—Reflective Pronoun of the 3rd Person.

Singular and Plural.

Nom.	soi		*himself, herself, itself, oneself, themselves*					
Gen.	de soi	*of*	,,	,,	,,	,,	,,	
Dat.	à soi	*to*	,,	,,	,,	,,	,,	
Acc.	soi		,,	,,	,,	,,	,,	

[1] *Y* and *en* follow any other Pronoun, except *y-moi, y-toi, y-le*: donne-m'en, *give me of it*; conduisez-nous-y, *take us there*; menez-y-le, *take him thither.*

202.—The Disjunctive Personal Pronouns must be employed—

(1) When they are neither the Subject nor the Object of the Verb :—

Qui est venu ? *lui, eux elles*	*who came ?* he, they
Qui a fait ce poème ? *moi* et *lui*	*who made this poem ?* I and he

(2) After any Preposition except *to* :—

Nous parlions *de toi, de lui*	*we were speaking* of *thee,* of *him*
Il viendra *avec eux*	*he will come* with *them*
Ils l'ont fait *pour moi*	*they did it* for *me*
But	
Il *te* parle, il *lui* parle, il *leur* parle	*he speaks* to *thee,* to *him,* to *them*

(3) After **c'est**, *it is* :—

c'est moi	*it is I*	c'est nous	*it is we*
c'est toi	*it is thou*	c'est vous	*it is you*
c'est lui	*it is he*	ce sont eux	*it is they*
c'est elle	*it is she*	ce sont elles	*it is they*

(4) When they are followed by *même* :—

moi-même	*I myself*	nous-mêmes	*we ourselves*
toi-même	*thou thyself*	vous-mêmes	*you yourselves*
lui-même	*he himself*	eux-mêmes	*they themselves*
soi-même	*oneself*	elles-mêmes	*they themselves*
elle-même	*she herself*		

II. Possessive Pronouns (Pronoms Possessifs).[1]

203.—*A. Conjunctive.*

	1st Pers.		2nd Pers.		3rd Pers.	
	Masc. Fem.		Masc. Fem.		Masc. Fem.	
a.	mon ma	*my*	ton ta	*thy*	son sa	*his, hers, its*
	mes mes	*my*	tes tes	*thy*	ses ses	*his, hers, its*
b.	notre	*our*	votre	*your*	leur	*their*
	nos	*our*	vos	*your*	leurs	*their*

[1] See *Reasons and Illustrations,* § 362.

204.—The Possessive Pronouns must be repeated before every Noun :—[1]

Mon oncle et *ma* tante sont arrivés	my *uncle and aunt have arrived*

205.—The French Possessive Pronouns always agree in number and gender with the *object possessed*, not with the *possessor*, as in English :—

Elle aime *son* père et *sa* mère	*she loves* her *father and* her *mother*
Il voit *son* frère, *sa* sœur et *ses* amis	*he sees* his *brother*, his *sister, and* his *friends*
Nous avons perdu *notre* chapeau et *nos* gants	*we have lost* our *hat and* our *gloves*

206.—For the sake of Euphony *mon, ton, son*, are used instead of *ma, ta, sa*, before feminine nouns beginning with a vowel or silent *h* :—[2]

Son attention cessa bientôt	his *attention soon flagged*

207.—*B. Disjunctive* :—[3]

a. le mien, la mienne, *mine ;* le tien, la tienne, *thine ;* le sien, la sienne, *his, hers, its*
les miens, les miennes, *mine ;* les tiens, les tiennes, *thine ;* les siens, les siennes, *his, hers, its*

b. le, la nôtre, *ours ;* le, la vôtre, *yours ;* le, la leur, *theirs*
les nôtres, *ours ;* les vôtres, *yours ;* les leurs, *theirs*

[1] In speaking to other people of their relatives, it is customary to use *Monsieur, Messieurs, Madame, Mademoiselle*, before the Possessive Adjective :—

Monsieur votre père est-il arrivé ?	*has your father come?*
Mademoiselle (or Mdlle.) votre sœur est-elle venue avec vous ?	*has your sister come with you?*

[2] See *Reasons and Illustrations*, § 363.

[3] See *ibid.*, § 364.

208.—The Disjunctive Pronouns, referring to a *Noun* mentioned before, must agree with it in number and gender :—

Prenez mon livre et *le sien*	*take my book and* his (*or* hers)
Voici sa plume et *la mienne*	*here is his pen and* mine
Notre jardin est plus grand que *le vôtre*	*our garden is larger than* yours

209.—If the Definitive Article, which stands before these Pronouns, be preceded by *de* or *à*, it becomes in the Sing. *du*, *au*, and in the Plur. *des*, *aux* (see § 161) :—

Voulez-vous *du mien?* Non, merci, j'aime mieux prendre *du sien* que *du vôtre*	*will you take* from mine? *No, thank you, I prefer taking* from his *than* from yours

III. Demonstrative Pronouns. (Pronoms Démonstratifs)[1].

210.—*A. Conjunctive.*

	Masc.		Fem.	
Sing.	ce	cet (before a *vowel* or *h* mute)	cette	*this*
Plur.	ces		ces	*these*

Voyez vous *ce* soldat?	*do you see* this *soldier?*
Donnez-moi *cet* argent	*give me* this *money*

211.—If a distinction is to be made between a *nearer* and a *more remote* object, the latter is pointed out by affixing *-ci*, the former by affixing *-là* :—

Ce live-*ci* et *ce* livre-*là*	this *book and* that *book*
Cet enfant-*là*, *ces* hommes-*là*	*that* child, *those* men

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 367.

212.—Contrary to English usage, these Pronouns must be repeated before every Substantive:—

Ces garçons et *ces* filles vont à l'école	these *boys and girls are going to school*

213.—*B. Disjunctive.*

		Masc.	Fem.	
a.	Sing.	celui	celle	*this, that*
	Plur.	ceux	celles	*these, those*
b		ceci ce	cela	*this, that,* *it*

214.—Neither *celui*, *celle*, &c., nor *ceci*, *cela*, are ever followed by a Noun; there is this difference between them, that the former Pronoun refers to a Noun expressed before, while the latter denotes something not already mentioned, but to which *we point* at the moment of speaking:—

Rendez-moi mon livre et *celui* (*ceux*) de mon neveu	*give me back my book and* that (those) *of my nephew*
Il a vendu sa voiture et *celle* (*celles*) de son ami	*he sold his carriage and* that (those) *of his friend*
Croyez-vous *cela?*	*do you believe* that?
Laissez-moi *ceci* et donnez-moi *cela*	*leave* this *to me and give me* that

215.—The Disjunctive or Neuter Pronoun *ce* (not to be confounded with the Conjunctive Demonstrative Pronoun, see § 210) never stands before a Noun nor in reference to a Noun mentioned before. It means:—

a. He, she, it, they, those, when it is placed before or after *être*.

Est-*ce* toi? Oui, *c'*est moi	*is* it *you? Yes*, it *is I*
Ce sont mes amis	they *are my friends*
*C'*est une excellente femme	she *is an excellent woman*

b. that which (= *what*) when followed by *qui*, or *que; that of which*, when followed by *dont* (see § 226).

Ce qui me plaît c'est sa prudence	what *pleases me, is his prudence*
Retenez *ce que* je vous dis	*remember* what *I tell you*
Ce dont vous m'avez parlé hier me contrarie beaucoup	that of which *you spoke to me yesterday annoys me very much*

216.—With the addition of *-ci*, *-là*, the Pronouns *celui-ci*, *celle-ci*, &c. are used with reference to the nearest object (= 1. *this*, 2. *the latter*), *celui-là*, *celle-là*, &c., with reference to the first-mentioned object (= 1. *that*, 2. *the former*).

Voici deux poires; prendrez-vous *celle-ci* ou *celle-là ?*	*here are two pears ; will you take* this (one) *or* that (one) ?
Cicéron et Démosthènes étaient deux grands orateurs ; *celui-là* vivait en Italie, *celui-ci* en Grèce	*Cicero and Demosthenes were two great orators ;* the former *lived in Italy,* the latter *in Greece*

217.—Followed by Relative Pronouns, *celui*, *celle*, &c. have the sense of *he who*, *she who*, *that which* :—

Nom.	celui, celle qui	*he, she who*	*that which*
Gen.	celui, celle dont	*he, she of whom*	*that of which*
	celui, celle de qui	*he, she of whom*	—
Dat.	celui à qui	*he, to whom*	—
	celui auquel	*he, to whom*	*that to which*
	celle à qui	*she, to whom*	—
	celle à laquelle	*she, to whom*	*that to which*
Acc.	celui, celle qui	*he, she whom*	*that which*

Similarly for the plural: ceux qui, celles qui, *they who*, &c.

Un monsieur est venu pendant votre absence, mais ce n'était pas *celui dont* vous avez parlé hier	*a gentleman called during your absence, but it was not* he of whom *you spoke yesterday*
N'avez-vous pas vu *celle à qui* j'avais donné la lettre ?	*did you not see* her to whom *I had given the letter ?*

IV. Interrogative Pronouns. (Pronoms Interrogatifs.[1])

218. *A. Conjunctive.*

	Singular.		Plural.		
	Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.	
Nom.	quel	quelle	quels	quelles	*which, what?*
Gen.	de quel	quelle	de quels	quelles	*of which, what?*
Dat.	à quel	quelle	à quels	quelles	*to which, what?*
Acc.	quel	quelle	quels	quelles	*which, what?*

De *quelle* femme parlez-vous ? of which *woman do you speak?*
Quel homme voulez-vous dire ? which *man do you mean?*

219.—*Quel* may be separated from its Substantive, but it must nevertheless agree with it in gender and number :—

Quelle est la capitale de la France? which *is the capital of France?*

220.—Translate *what a* simply by *quel, quelle*, &c.

Quel homme ! *quelle* surprise ! what a *man!* what a *surprise!*

221.—*B. Disjunctive.*

	a. Persons.		*b. Persons and Things.*			*c. Things.*	
	Masc. & Fem.		Masc.	Fem.			
N.	qui	*who?*	lequel	laquelle	*which?*	que, quoi	*what?*
G.	de qui	*whose? of whom?*	duquel	de laquelle	*of which?*	de quoi	*of what?*
D.	à qui	*to whom?*	auquel	à laquelle	*to which?*	à quoi	*to what?*
A.	qui	*whom?*	lequel	laquelle	*which?*	que, quoi	*what?*

222.—*Lequel*, in the plural *lesquels, lesquelles*, &c. is used when we are asking *which among several* persons or things. It is therefore always followed by a genitive or a genitive has to be supplied.

Lequel de ces temps faut-il employer ici ? which *of these tenses must be used here?*
Vous me dites que vous avez rencontré mon frère, *lequel?* *you tell me that you met my brother*—which?

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 369.

223. *Whose* (see also §§ 229 and 230) is *de qui* or *à qui;* the latter is used when it stands before *être,* and means *to whom belongs ?*—

De qui Charlemagne était-il le fils ?	whose *son was Charlemagne ?*
A qui est cette maison ?	whose *house is this ?*

224.—The *periphrastic* interrogation, *qui est-ce qui,* may be used instead of *qui,* &c. :—

Nom.	*qui* a chanté ici ? *qui* est-ce *qui* a chanté ici ?	who *sang here ?*
Gen.	*de qui* parlez-vous ? *de qui* est-ce *que* vous parlez ?	of whom *do you speak ?*
Dat.	*à qui* écrivez-vous ? *à qui* est-ce *que* vous écrivez ?	to whom *are you writing ?*
Acc.	*qui* voyez-vous ? *qui* est-ce *que* vous voyez ?	whom *do you see ?*

225.—Similarly we may say *qu'est-ce qui* and *qu'est-ce que* instead of *que* :— [1]

Nom.	*qu'*est-il arrivé ? *qu'*est-ce *qui* est arrivé ?	what [2] *has happened ?*
Gen.	*de quoi* parle-t-il ? *de quoi* est-ce *qu'il* parle ?	of what *is he speaking ?*

[1] *Que* is also used in the sense of an Adverb or a Conjunction (= combien, pourquoi ?).

Que de services il vous a rendus !	how many *services he has rendered you !*
Que ne se plaint-il auprès du roi ?	why *does he not* complain to the king ?

[2] The nominative *what* can be rendered by *que* only before Impersonal or Intransitive Verbs (*que deviendrai-je ? que se passe-t-il ?*); before all other Verbs *qu'est-ce qui* must be employed (*qu'est-ce qui vous afflige ? = what*).

Dat.	*à quoi* visez-vous?	at what *are you aiming?*
	à quoi est-ce *que* vous visez?	
Acc.	*que* désirez-vous?	what *do you wish?*
	*qu'*est-ce *que* vous désirez?	

226—V. Relative Pronouns. (Pronoms Relatifs).[1]

a. *Masc. and Fem.*

Sing. & Plur.

Nom.	qui	*who, which*
Gen.	de qui, dont[2]	*of whom, which*
Dat.	à qui	*to whom, which*
Acc.	que (*qui* only after Prepositions and in speaking of persons)	*whom, which*

	Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.	
b.	lequel	laquelle	lesquels	lesquelles	*who, which*
	duquel	de laquelle	desquels	desquelles	*of whom, which*
	auquel	à laquelle	auxquels	auxquelles	*to whom, which*
	lequel	laquelle	lesquels	lesquelles	*whom, which*

c.	Nom.	ce qui	*that which, what*
	Gen.	ce dont	*that of which*
	Dat.	ce à quoi	*that to which*
	Acc.	ce que	*that which, what*

L'homme *qui* fut tué	*the man* who *was killed*
Le mot *dont* vous parlez	*the word* of which *you speak*
La dame *à qui* vous avez écrit	*the lady* to whom *you wrote*
L'enfant *qui* vous voyez	*the child* whom *you see*
L'ami avec *qui* j'ai fait ce voyage	*the friend* with whom *I made this voyage*

227.—The final *e* of *que* is elided before a *Vowel* or *silent h; qui* never changes:—

La maison *qu'il* a achetée (for *que il*); l'ami avec *qui il* est venu.

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 369. [2] See *ibid*, § 370.

228.—The Relative Pronouns *who*, *which*, may be omitted in English: they must *always* be expressed in French :—

Le livre *que* vous avez acheté est excellent	*the book you bought is excellent*

229.—*Whose* is generally rendered by *dont* which must immediately be followed by the *subject* of the Relative Clause :—

Le soldat *dont vous* connaissez les enfants	*the soldier whose children* you *know*
But :—	
Le soldat *dont les enfants* vous connaissent	*the soldier* whose children *know you*

230.—Instead of *dont* we must use *de qui*, or *duquel*, *desquels*, &c., if *whose* depends on a Noun governed by a Preposition :—

Le prince *sur* la protection *duquel* (or *de qui*) vous comptez	*the prince* on whose *protection you count*
Le journal *dans* les colonnes *duquel* j'ai trouvé cette nouvelle	*the journal* in *the columns* of which *I found this news*
Les généraux *à* la bienveillance *desquels* (or *de qui*) vous devez tout	*the generals* to whose *kindness you owe everything*

231.—*Qui* is used in speaking of *persons*.

232.—*Lequel*, &c. which always agrees in gender and number with the Noun to which it refers, is used instead of *qui*.

a. When, referring to *animals* or *things*, it is governed by a preposition :—

Voici le livre *dans lequel* j'ai trouvé tant de fautes	*here is the book* in which *I found so many mistakes*
Le cheval *sur lequel* il est monté	*the horse* on which *he mounted*

b. When there would be an *ambiguity* in the phrase :—

Le frère de la jeune captive *lequel* a écrit cette lettre, est très habile	*the brother of the young captive girl* who *wrote this letter is very clever*

N.B. If *qui* were used here instead of *lequel*, it would, as it always does, refer to the Noun which immediately precedes it, and the sense of this sentence would altogether be changed.

VI. The Adverbs EN, Y, OÙ, DONT, used as Pronouns.

233.—(1) **En** originally an Adverb (*Lat. inde = from there*) is used :—

a. As a Personal Pronoun of both genders and numbers in reference to persons and chiefly to animals and things ; it corresponds to the *Genitive* case, and stands instead of *de lui, d'elle, d'eux, d'elles* (*of him, of it, of her, of them*) :—

Parlez-vous de ces livres? Oui, nous *en* parlons.	*do you speak of these books? Yes, we speak* of them
Cette maladie est dangereuse; il *en* mourra	*this illness is dangerous ; he will die* of it

b. As a Possessive Pronoun, instead of *his, her, its, their* :—

Je viens de voir Londres ; les palais *en* sont magnifiques	*I have just seen London ;* its *palaces are beautiful*
J'aime les fleurs ; j'*en* admire la beauté	*I like flowers ; I admire* their *beauty*

c. In the sense of *some, any, none of it, of them* :—

Si vous avez des roses, donnez m'*en* quelques unes	*if you have any roses, give me* some
Voici des plumes; *en* voulez-vous ?	*here are pens ; do you want* any?

Obs. In French, *en* must be used in the answer :—

a. When the Noun or the Pronoun in the question is preceded by *de*.—

Ont-ils parlé *de* lui? Oui, ils *en* ont parlé	*have they spoken* of *him? Yes, they have*

b. When the Noun in the question is used in a *partitive* sense :—

A-t-il *des* protecteurs? Oui, il *en* a de très-puissants	*has he* any *protectors? Yes, he has very powerful ones*
Avez-vous *du* papier? Oui, j'*en* ai	*have you* any *paper? Yes, I have*

c. When the Noun in the question is preceded by *un* or *une;* in this case *un* or *une* must be repeated in the answer, except when the answer is negative :—

A-t-il *un* cheval? Oui, il *en* a *un*	*has he got* a *horse? Yes, he has*
Avez-vous perdu *une* plume?	*have you lost* a *pen?*
Oui, j'en ai perdu *une*	*yes, I have*
A-t-il *un* piano? Non, il n'*en* a *pas*	*has he* a *piano? No, he has not*

d. When the Noun in the question or in the first part of the sentence is preceded by a *numeral* or an *adverb of quantity*:—

Vous avez *deux* frères, et moi, j'*en* ai quatre	*you have* two *brothers and I have four*
Puisque vous avez *tant de* fleurs, donnez m'*en une* (or *quelques unes*)	*as you have* so many *flowers, give me one* (or *some*)

234.—(2) **Y** is used not only as an Adverb (*Lat. ibi, there*) but also as a demonstrative pronoun of both genders and numbers; it is mostly employed with reference to *animals, things*, and *places*, rarely with reference to persons; it stands for the *Dative*, and corresponds to the English *to it, at it, upon it, in it, him, her, them.*

Avez-vous été à Londres? Oui, j'*y* ai été [1]	*have you been in London? Yes, I have* (*been* there)
Voici sa lettre, répondez-*y*	*here is his letter; answer* (to) it
Je vous rendrai vos thèmes si j'*y* trouve trop de fautes	*I shall give you back your exercises if I find* in them *too many mistakes*

Obs. Generally speaking, *y* = *there*, is used instead of *là* = *there*, when it points to a place which has been named before :—

N'allez pas *là*, ce serait dangereux	*don't go* there, *it would be dangerous*
J'aime Manchester, j'*y* ai passé plusieurs années	*I like Manchester; I have been* there *for several years*

235.—(3) The Adverb **Où**, *where* (*Lat. ubi*), becomes a Relative Pronoun when it is used for *lequel*, *laquelle*, &c. preceded by *à*, *dans*, *par*, &c. ; it is of both numbers and genders, and refers only to things :—

La maison *où* (or *dans laquelle*) il demeure est mal bâtie	*the house* in which *he lives is badly built*
Les pays *par où* (or *par lesquels*) j'ai passé, étaient malsains	*the countries* through which *I passed were unhealthy*

(4) **Dont** was originally an Adverb, *whence, out of which* (*Lat. de unde*); it is now scarcely ever used but as a Pronoun. (See §§ 229 and 230.)

VII. Indefinite Pronouns. (Pronoms Indéfinis).[2]

236.—*A. Indefinite Pronouns used Substantively.*

[1] When the Noun in the question is preceded by *à*, *dans*, *en*, *sur*, &c., **y** must be added in the answer, although it does not appear in English :—

Avez-vous été à Paris? Non, je n'*y* ai pas été	*have you been* in *Paris? No, I have not* (*been* there)
La lettre est-elle *sur* la table? Oui elle *y* est	*is the letter* on *the table? Yes, it is* (there)

[2] See *Reasons*, &c., § 371.

(1) **Chacun** *fem.* **chacune** [1] *every one, each*, has no plural (as for *chaque*, see § 237) :—

Chacun pense à soi	every one *thinks of himself*
Chacune de ses dames	each *of these ladies*

(2) **Quelqu'un** [2] *fem.* **quelqu'une**; *plur.* **quelques uns** *fem.* **quelques unes**, *some, somebody* (in questions, *any, anybody*) *some one* (as for *quelque*, see § 237) :—

J'attends *quelqu'un* ici	*I wait for* somebody *here*
Quelqu'un de ces messieurs	some one *of these gentlemen*
Connaissez-vous *quelques unes* de ces dames ?	*do you know* any *of these ladies ?*

(3) **Quiconque** [3] *whoever* (*he who*), *whosoever*, has no plural, and refers only to persons ; the Adjective takes the feminine gender when it refers to a lady :—

Quiconque n'observera pas cette loi, sera puni	whoever *does not observe this law will be punished*
Il hait *quiconque* blâme son ami	*he hates the man* (him) who *blames his friend*
Quiconque de vous, mesdemoiselles, se montrera *envieuse*, sera grondée	*ladies*, whoever *of you proves envious will be scolded*

(4) **On** [4] (for which form **l'on** is generally, but not necessarily, used after *et, si, où, qui, que, quoi*, except when *on* is followed by a word beginning with *l* : *et on lui donna*, not *et l'on lui donna* [5]), is of the masculine gender and always requires the Verb to be in the Singular ; it means *one, they, we, people* :—

On dit qu'il viendra	they (people) *say that he will come*
Si l'on n'était pas venu me surprendre	*if* they *had not taken me by surprise*
Et l'on se trompe si facilement	*And* we *deceive ourselves so easily*

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 371, No. 5.
[2] See *ibid.*, § 371, No. 16.
[3] See *ibid*, § 371, No. 17.
[4] See *ibid.*, § 371, No 10.
[5] When *qu'on* is followed by a word beginning with the syllable *con*, it is preferable to use *que l'on* : *Je veux* que l'on *continue* instead of *je veux* qu'on con*tinue*.

This pronoun is often used in order to avoid the *passive voice.*

On les laissa seuls	*they* were *left alone*
On m'a raconté	*I* have been *told*
On dit que	*it* is said *that*

(5) *a.* **Personne**[1] *nobody, no one* is always masculine and singular and requires the negative *ne*[2] before the verb :— [3]

*Personne n'*est tué	*nobody* has been killed
Je *n'*ai rencontré *personne*	*I met* no one

b. Personne, rien, and *aucun* must be followed by *de* before an Adjective. See also § 167 (2):—

Il n'y a *rien de* grand comme l'homme vertueux succombant au malheur	*there is* nothing *so great as the virtuous man sinking under the weight of misfortune*
Il n'y a parmi eux *personne de plus juste* que lui	*there is among them* no one *more just than he*

[1] *Personne* in the sense of *a person* (*man* or *woman*), *people*, is a Noun Feminine :—

Remarquez-vous cette *personne* ?	*do you notice this* person ?
Des *personnes* bien intentionnées	*well-intentioned* people

[2] The Pronouns *personne, aucun, rien,* and *nul,* are used without *ne*—

a. When they are not accompanied by a Verb :—

Qui est venu ? *Personne*	*who came* ? No one
Qu'a-t-il fait ? *Rien*	*what did he do* ? Nothing

b. When the interrogative form is employed only in order to affirm with so much greater emphasis, *personne* and *aucun* then mean *anybody*, and *rien* anything :—

Y-a-t-il *rien* de plus beau que ce tableau ?	*is there* anything *finer than this picture* ?
Personne oserait-il nier cela ?	*would* any one *dare to deny this* ?

This form of expression only serves to affirm energetically that there is *nothing* more beautiful than this picture, and that *no one* would dare to deny such a statement.

If, in these two examples, we were to use *quelque chose* or *quelqu'un* instead of *rien* and *personne*, the sense of the phrase would no longer be the same. For in saying : Y a-t-il *quelque chose* de plus beau que ce tableau ? *Quelqu'un* oserait-il nier cela ? we ask a real question to which we expect an answer. The translation of the ordinary question, *Has any one dared to deny this* ? would be : *Personne n'a-t-il osé nier cela* ?

[3] See *Reasons*, &c., § 384.

c. Personne and *aucun* are used without *ne* (see also p. 147, Note 2), when they follow a Verb which expresses *doubt*:—

Il doute que *personne* le trouve	*he doubts whether* any one *will find it*

(6) **Autrui**,[1] *others, other people*, only refers to persons, has no Singular, and is generally preceded by a Preposition:—

Ne faites pas *à autrui* ce que vous ne voudriez pas qu'on vout fît	*do not* to others *what you would not wish others to do to you*

(7) **Quelque chose**, *something*, is of the masculine gender, see § 182 (4):—

On lui dit que *quelque chose* de désagréable était arrivé	*he was told that* something *disagreeable had happened*

(8) **Rien**,[2] *nothing*, is an indefinite Pronoun masculine singular, and requires *ne* before the Verb:—

Je ne vois *rien*	*I see* nothing
Rien ne l'intéresse	nothing *interests him*

Rem. 1. On *rien* used without *ne*, see *aucun*, p. 147, Note 2.

Rem. 2. *Rien* may be employed as a Noun in the sense of *thing of no importance*;—

Dire des *riens*	*to talk* nothings

(9) **Qui que**, *whosoever, whomsoever*; **quoi que**, *whatsoever, howsoever*, to be followed by the Subjunctive:—

Qui que ce soit	whoever *he may be*
Qui que vous blâmiez	whomsoever *you blame*
*Quoi qu'*il en soit	however *that may be*

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 371, No. 3.

[2] See *ibid*, § 384.

237.—*B. Indefinite Pronouns used Adjectively.*

(1) **Chaque,**[1] *every, each,* is of both genders and has no plural; it is always followed by a Noun, whilst *chacun* is always used without a Noun. See § 236 (1):—

Chaque homme a sa passion	every *man has his passion*
Chaque fille aime à jouer	every *girl likes playing*

(2) *a.* **Quelque,**[2] *pl.* **quelques,** *some,* is of both genders, and is always followed by a Noun. See § 236 (2):—

Donnez-moi *quelque* argent	*give me* some *money*
Il y a *quelques* fautes	*there are* some *mistakes*

b. **Quelque,** *plur.* **quelques,** with **que** before the succeeding Verb, which must be in the Subjunctive mood, means *whatever, whatsoever*:—[3]

Quelque soin *qu'*on prenne	whatever *care one may take*
Quelques efforts *que* tu fasses	whatever *efforts you may make*
Quelques grandes richesses *qu'*ils aient	what *great riches* soever *they may have*

c. **Quelque,** followed by an Adverb or by an Adjective without a Noun, is an Adverb and as such remains invariable; it means *however, howsoever*:—

Quelque bien jouées *que* soient ces tragédies . . .	however *well these tragedies may be played* . . .
Quelque modestes *qu'*ils soient je ne les aime pas	however *modest they may be, I do not like them*

[1] See *Reasons,* &c., § 371, No. 6.
[2] See *ibid.,* § 371, No. 15.
[3] If *whatever* should govern the Verb *To Be* (e.g. *whatever* his excuse may *be*), it is rendered in French by *quel que,* which agrees with the subject of the clause in Number and Gender, and must immediately be followed by the Subjunctive of *être*:—

Quelle que soit son excuse	whatever *his excuse may be*
Quels que soient mes desseins	whatever *my plans may be*

(3) **Quelconque,**[1] *plur.* **quelconques,** is of both genders, and always follows the Noun :—

Un prétexte *quelconque*	any *pretext* whatever
Deux points *quelconques* étant donnés . . .	any *two points being given* . . .

(4) **Maint,**[2] **mainte;** *plur.* **maints, maintes,** *many a;* this Pronoun is scarcely ever used but in the familiar style :—

Maint homme se conduit en enfant	many a *man behaves like a child*

(5) **Certain,**[3] **certaine;** *plur.* **certains, certaines,** *some, certain;*[4] this Pronoun is sometimes preceded by *un* :—

Certaines gens se plaignent toujours	some *people are always complaining*
Un certain loup aperçut un agneau	a *wolf saw a lamb*

(6) **Différents, différentes, divers, diverses,** } *different, various* :—

Les *différentes* parties de ce discours	*the* different *parts of this speech*

238.—*C. Indefinite Pronouns used both Substantively and Adjectively.*

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 371, No. 14.
[2] See *ibid.*, § 371, No. 7.
[3] See *ibid.*, § 371, No. 4.
[4] Placed after the Noun, *certain* has the sense of *sure, indubitable* :—

C'est une marque *certaine*	*it is a* sure *sign*

(1) **Aucun,**[1] **aucune,**
(2) **Nul, nulle,** } *none, no one, not one, no;*

they are seldom used in the plural, and always require *ne* before the Verb :—

Aucun homme *n'*est parfaitement heureux	no one *is perfectly happy*
Aucun n'est prophète chez soi	no one *is a prophet in his own country*
Nul n'est immortel	no one *is immortal*

Aucun, e, is sometimes placed after its Substantive, especially in the feminine gender :—

Sans exception *aucune*	*without* any *exception*

(3) **Pas un, pas une,**[2] *no one, not a single one,* requires the Verb with *ne* :—

Pas un n'est venu	not a single one *came*

(4) **Plusieurs,**[3] *several, many* is invariable and of both genders :—

Plusieurs amis m'ont écrit	several *friends have written to me*
Il paya bien cher *plusieurs* de ses victoires	*he paid dearly for* several *of his victories*

(5) **Tel, telle,**[4] **tels, telles :**[5] *such,* is *preceded* by *un, une,* whilst, in English, *such* is *followed* by the Indefinite Article :—

Une telle amie	Such a *friend*

[1] See *Reasons,* &c., § 371, No. 1.
[2] See *ibid.,* § 384.
[3] See *ibid.,* § 371, No. 12.
[4] See *ibid.,* § 371, No. 19.
[5] Notice the following meanings of *tel* :—
(1) tel qui, *many a one*
(2) tel quel, *such as it is, was; of small value*
(3) Mr. un tel, *Mr. so and so*

Tel qui rit le matin pleure le soir *Tel* rit le matin *qui* pleure le soir	many a one *laughs in the morning who weeps in the evening*
Je lui rendis son chapeau *tel quel*	*I gave him back his hat,* such as it was
Ce vin est *tel quel*	*this wine is only* middling, so so

In the Plural, *tels*, *telles*, may be used with *de* or without *de*:—

De tels soldats	such soldiers
Je ferai *telles* conditions	*I shall make* such *conditions*

(6) **Autre**,[1] *other*, remains the same both for the Masculine and the Feminine:—[2]

Un *autre* ami ; une *autre* fin	another *friend* ; another *end*
Donnez-moi *d'autres* exemples	*give me* other *examples*
D'autres vous diront le contraire	others *will tell you the contrary*

(7) **L'un l'autre**
L'une l'autre } *each other* with reference to *two* persons or things.

Les uns les autres
Les unes les autres } *each other* with reference to *more than two* persons or things.

Ils se haissent *l'un l'autre*	*they hate* each other
Ils se battent *les uns les autres*	*they beat* each other

(8) **L'un et l'autre**[3]
L'une et l'autre } *both* in speaking of *two* persons or things.

Les uns et les autres
Les unes et les autres } *both* in speaking of *more than two* persons or things.

L'un et l'autre cheval sont tombés	both *horses fell*
L'un et l'autre sont venus	both *have come*

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 371, No. 2.

[2] *Autres* is often added to *nous* and *vous* in order to mark opposition :—

Nous autres Anglais, nous ne croyons pas cela	we *English don't believe that*

Autre is sometimes used in the sense of *second*:—

C'est un *autre* Démosthènes	*he is a* second *Demosthenes*
Un *autre* moi-même	*my* second *self*

[3] If there be any Preposition, it must be put before *l'un* and before *l'autre*:—

Il parle à l'un et à l'autre	*he is speaking* to both

(9) *a.* **Tout,**[1] **toute**[2] = *every, each,* when used without any Article.

Tout, toute = *whole,* when used with the Singular of the Definite Article.

Tous, toutes = *all,* when used with the Plural of the Definite Article.

Tout homme est mortel	*every* man is mortal
*Tout l'*homme ne meurt pas	the *whole* man does not die
Tous les hommes sont mortels	*all* men are mortal
La plus belle fleur *de tout le* jardin	the most beautiful flower *in the whole* garden

Rem. The last example shows that *tout* always prevents the contraction of the Preposition *de* with the Definite Article. (See § 163.)

b. **Le tout** is a Substantive,[3] meaning *the whole* :—

Divisez *le tout* en 3 parties	*divide* the whole *in* 3 *parts*
Il donnera *le tout* à son meilleur ami	*he will give* the whole *to his best friend*

[1] On *tout* before the name of a town, see p. 111., Note 2.
[2] See *Reasons,* &c., § 371, No. 20.
[3] **Tout** may also be used as an Adverb = *quite, entirely,* and as such it remains invariable; but if it be immediately followed by the Feminine form of an Adjective or a Participle beginning with a Consonant or an *h* Aspirate, it agrees with the Adjective or Participle in *Number* and *Gender*:—

Nous sommes *tout* prêts	*we are* quite *ready*
Elle fut *tout* étonnée, *tout* heureuse	*she was* quite *astonished,* quite *happy*
Elles furent *tout* affligées	*they were* quite *sad*
Nous sommes *tout* oreilles	*we are* all *ears*
But—	
Elle fut *toute* déconcertée *toute* honteuse	*she was* quite *disconcerted and ashamed*
Elles furent *toutes* changées	*they were* quite *changed*

Rem. If, in the first example, we were to write, 'Nous sommes *tous* prêts, *tous* would no longer be an Adverb; it would be the Adjective, and mean: *all: we are all ready.* Thus :—

Ces vins sont *tout* purs	*these wines are* quite *pure*
Ces vins sont *tous* purs	*these wines are* all *pure*

c. **Tout** used alone means *everything*:—

Tout est changé ici	everything *is changed here*

d. **Tout le monde** generally means *every one; the whole world* is rendered by *le monde entier.*

(10) *a.* **Même,**[1] Plur. **mêmes** = *same, self, alike,* of both Genders, follows the Substantive or the Pronoun:—

Le roi *même* (*or* le roi *lui-même*)	*the king* himself
La reine *même* (*or* la reine *elle-même*)	*the queen* herself
C'est la douceur *même*	*he is gentleness* itself

b. **Le même, la même, les mêmes,** Masculine and Feminine = *the same*:—

Cela se trouve dans *le même* livre	*this is found in the* same *book*
Ce sont *les mêmes*	*they are the* same
Il mourut *le même* jour	*he died the* same *day*
But:—	
Il mourut le jour *même*	*he died the* very *day*

c. **Même** takes an *s* when it is used:—

(1) between the Article and the Noun in the Plural;

(2) after *one* Noun or Pronoun in the Plural;

(3) substantively (see above, *b*).

Vous avez fait les *mêmes* fautes que lui	*you have made the* same *mistakes as he*
Voilà mes *amis mêmes* (or *eux-mêmes*)	*there are my friends* themselves
Ces garçons seront toujours *les mêmes*	*these boys will always be the* same

[1] On *même* preceded by *moi, toi,* &c., see above, § 202. On its etymology, see *Reasons,* &c., § 371, No. 8.

But *même* remains invariable when used as an *Adverb* in the sense of *even*, i.e.—

(1) when it precedes the Article;

(2) when it follows several Substantives;

(3) when it qualifies another word but the Substantive.

Même les femmes furent tuées	even *the women were killed*
Ses élèves, ses enfants *même* l'ont abandonné	*his pupils*, even *his children*, *have left him.*
Il ne voulut pas *même* m'écouter	*he would not* even *listen to me*

CHAPTER VI.—NUMERALS (ADJECTIFS NUMÉRAUX).[1]

239.—(1) Cardinal Numbers (Nombres Cardinaux).

1	un (m.), une (f.)[1]		30	trente
2	deux		31	trente et un
3	trois		32	trente-deux
4	quatre[2]		40	quarante
5	cinq		50	cinquante
6	six		60	soixante
7	sept		70	soixante-dix
8	huit		71	soixante-onze
9	neuf		72	soixante-douze, &c.
10	dix		80	quatre-vingts[2]
11	onze		81	quatre-vingt-un
12	douze		82	quatre-vingt-deux
13	treize		90	quatre-vingt-dix[3]
14	quatorze		91	quatre-vingt-onze
15	quinze		99	quatre-vingt-dix-neuf
16	seize		100	cent (*t* mute)
17	dix-sept		101	cent un (*t* mute)
18	dix-huit		102	cent deux (*t* mute)
19	dix-neuf		200	deux cents
20	vingt (*gt* mute)[3]		210	deux cent dix
21	vingt et un	*t* in *vingt* sounded	1000	mille
22	vingt-deux		2000	deux mille
23	vingt-trois		100000	cent mille
24	vingt-quatre, &c.		1000000	un million

Note.—*Naught* is *zéro* in French.

[1] See *Reasons and Illustrations*, § 372.
[2] See *ibid.*, § 374.
[3] See *ibid.*, § 375.

240—The *a* of the Definite Article *la*, and the final *e* of words preceding *huit* and *onze*, are generally not elided before these two numerals :—

Le huit mars, *le* onze juin, *la* onzième partie ; il n'y eut *que* onze.

241.— *Vingt* and *cent* take an *s* when they are multiplied by a *number* and not followed by any other :—

Quatre-vingts hommes ; *deux cents* enfants ; il y en avait *deux cents*.

But :—

Quatre-vingt-trois hommes, *cent* enfants, *deux cent dix* soldats.

242.—*Quatre-vingt* and *cent* remain unchanged when they are used as an *ordinal number* or in *dates* :—

Page *quatre-vingt* ; page *trois cent* ; en mil *six cent* ; l'an *quatre-vingt*.

243.—Neither *one* nor *and* are expressed, whether they precede or follow *hundred* and *thousand* :—

cent dix pages	*one* hundred *and* ten pages
cent livres	*one* hundred pounds
mille trois cents exemplaires	*one* thousand three hundred copies

244.—*Pronunciation.* The final consonant of *cinq*, *six*, *sept*, *huit*, *neuf*, and *dix*, is sounded—

a. before a *Vowel* or silent *h* : dix‿aunes, sept‿hommes ;

b. when the *Numeral* stands *alone* : nous étions neuf ;

c. when the *Cardinal* Number is used instead of the *Ordinal* (see § 253) : le cinq septembre.

In all other cases the final Consonant of these Numerals is mute : cinq (pron. *cin*) livres ; six (pron. *si*) héros.

The final Consonant of words preceding *huit* and *onze* is mute : *vers les | huit heures, vers les | onze heures.* (Similarly : *vers les | une heure*).

245.—*Mille*, thousand, never takes *s* :[1] *trois milles ans.* *Mil* is used instead of *mille* in dates of the Christian era, if it is followed by a Numeral Adjective :—

Mil deux cent quatorze ; en *mil* trois cent quarante.
But :—
L'an *mille* ; l'an deux *mille* ; l'an quatre *mille* huit du monde.

246.—*Million, billion, trillion*, take *s* in the Plural.

247.—'*In the year*' is *en* or *l'an* (the latter more generally used for numbers *under* hundred : *l'an* 48) :—

En mil huit cent cinquante, *in the year* 1850.

248.—When two numerals are joined together, the larger always precedes : *trente-deux ; vingt-cinq* (not *cinq et vingt*, as in English sometimes, *five and twenty*).

249.—(2) Ordinal Numbers (Nombres Ordinaux).[2]

1st.	Le premier (m.)	4th.	Le quatrième
	La première (f.)[3]	5th.	Le cinquième
2nd.	Le second (m.)	6th.	Le sixième
	La seconde (f.)[3]	7th.	Le septième
	Le deuxième (m.)	8th.	Le huitième
	La deuxième (f.)[4]	9th.	Le neuvième
3rd.	Le troisième	10th.	Le dixième

250.—The other Ordinal Numbers are formed by adding *-ième* to the Cardinal Numbers of which the final

[1] Mille, *a mile*, takes *s* in the Plural : deux milles, *two miles*.
[2] See *Reasons and Illustrations*, § 379 *sq.*
[3] See *ibid.*, § 379. [4] See *ibid.*, § 380.

e is omitted if they end in this Vowel: *onz*e, *onz-ième; douz*e, *douzième.*

251.—*First* is to be translated by *premier* when it stands by itself, and by *unième* when preceded by another number:—

Le *premier* livre	*the* first *book*
Le *vingt-unième* (or *vingt et unième*) chapitre	*the* twenty-first *chapter*

252.—*Deuxième* must be used instead of *second* (pronounce *segon*) when there is a third.

253.—The *Cardinal* instead of the *Ordinal* Numbers are used—

a. For the *Days* of the *Month* (exc. *le premier*): *le quatre mars, le onze juin* (see § 240), *le premier août.*[1]

N.B. *Of* before the name of a *month* and *on* in *dates*, or used with the *days of the week*, are not expressed: le quatre mars = on *the 4th* of *March;* il arriva lundi = *he arrived* on *Monday.*

b. In *Quotations* (exc. *le premier*): livre trois, chapitre cinq = *book the third, chapter the fifth.*

c. After the names of *Sovereigns* (exc. *le premier; second* is used conjointly with *deux*): Henri trois, *Henry* the *Third;* Charles premier, *Charles* the *First;* Louis deux (or Louis second), *Louis* the *Second.*

Obs. Pope Sixtus V. and the *Emperor Charles V.* are: *Sixte-Quint* and *Charles-Quint* (but: Charles V., king of France = *Charles cinq*).

[1] The names of the *month* and of the *days* of the *week* are written with small initials:
janvier, février, mars, avril, mai, juin, juillet, août, septembre, octobre, novembre, décembre
dimanche, lundi, mardi, mercredi, jeudi, vendredi, samedi

254.—(3) Collective Numerals (Nombres Collectifs).

Une huitaine	*about* 8	une quarantaine	*about* 40
une dixaine	*about* 10	une cinquantaine	*about* 50
une douzaine	*a dozen*	une soixantaine	*about* 60
une quinzaine	*about* 15	une centaine	*about* 100
une vingtaine	*a score*	un millier	*about* 1000
une trentaine	*about* 30		

255.—(4) Fractional Numerals (Nombres Fractionnaires).

La moitié	*the half*	un quart	*a fourth*
demi (f. demie)	*half*	deux quarts	*two fourths*
un tiers	*a third*	un cinquième	*a fifth*
deux tiers	*two thirds*	deux cinquièmes	*two fifths*
trois tiers	*three thirds*, &c.	trois sixièmes	*three sixths*

Obs. 1. From *five* upwards the *Ordinal* Numbers are used.

Obs. 2. *Demi* is variable only when following the Noun: *une demi-heure; une heure et demie.*

256.—(5) Multiplicative Numerals (Nombres Proportionnels).

Simple	*simple*	sextuple *or* six fois autant	
double	*double*	septuple *or* sept fois autant	
triple	*treble*	octuple *or* huit fois autant	
quadruple	*fourfold*	décuple *or* dix fois autant	
quintuple	*fivefold*	centuple *or* cent fois autant	

All the others are formed thus:

onze fois autant; douze fois autant, &c.

Obs. They become Substantives when preceded by the Article: *le double, le triple*, &c.

CHAPTER VII.—ADVERBS.[1]

(1) Place of the Adverb.

257.—The Adverb is generally placed *after* the Verb in *Simple* Tenses, and between the *Auxiliary* and the *Participle* in *Compound* Tenses :— [2]

Il voyage *beaucoup ;* il a *beaucoup* voyagé.

(2) Adverbs derived from Adjectives.

258.—*a. Their Formation.* Adverbs are derived from Adjectives in the following way :—

1. The suffix **-ment** [3] is added to Adjectives ending in a **vowel** :—

Sage, *sage-ment ;* vrai, *vrai-ment ;* aisé, *aisé-ment.*

Exc. 1. *Traître* has *traîtreusement, treacherously ; puni* forms the Adverb *impunément, with impunity.*

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 382.

[2] Adverbial expressions are placed *after* the Past Particip'e even if the Verb is in a Compound Tense :—

Il l'avait rencontré *par hasard.*

[3] See *Reasons*, &c., § 385.

Exc. 2. The following Adjectives take an acute accent on the final *e* mute before adding *-ment* :—

Aveugle	aveuglément	*blindly*
commode	commodément	*commodiously*
conforme	conformément	*conformably*
énorme	enormément	*enormously*
immense	immensément	*immensely*
incommode	incommodément	*incommodiously*
opiniâtre	opiniatrément	*obstinately*
uniforme	uniformément	*uniformly*

Exc. 3. A *circumflex accent* is placed on the vowel preceding the suffix *-ment* :—

Assidûment	*diligently*	dûment	*duly*
continûment	*continuedly*	gaîment	*gaily*
crûment	*bluntly*	nûment	*plainly*

Exc. 4. *Beau, fou, mou, nouveau,* form their Adverbs according to the *second* rule : *bellement* (gently), *follement, mollement, nouvellement.*

2. The suffix *-ment* is added to the *Feminine termination* of Adjectives ending in a *Consonant* :—

Franc	franche	franche-ment	*frankly*
vif	vive	vive-ment	*lively*
long	longue	longue-ment	*a long time*
léger	légère	légère-ment	*lightly*
doux	douce	douce-ment	*gently*

Exc. 1. *Gentil* makes *gentiment, prettily.*

Exc. 2. Before adding *-ment*, an *acute accent* is placed over the final *e* of the Feminine of the following Adjectives :—

Commun	commune	communé-ment	*commonly*
confus	confuse	confusé-ment	*confusedly*
diffus	diffuse	diffusé-ment	*diffusedly*
exprès	expresse	expressé-ment	*expressly*
importun	importune	importuné-ment	*importunately*
obscur	obscure	obscuré-ment	*obscurely*
précis	precise	precisé-ment	*precisely*
profond	profonde	profondé-ment	*profoundly*
profus	profuse	profusé-ment	*profusely*

3. Adjectives in **ant** and **ent** change these terminations into **amment** and **emment** respectively :—

Constant, *constamment;* prudent, *prudemment.*

Except.	Lent	lentement	*slowly*
	présent	présentement	*presently*
	véhément	véhémentement	*strongly*

259.—*b. Their Comparison.*

1. Adverbs are compared in the same manner as Adjectives (see above, § 190) :— [1]

Pos. Vivement ; *Comp.* plus vivement ; *Sup.* le plus vivement.

2. *Than* after a Comparative is generally expressed by *que: il écrit mieux que sa sœur.* After *plus* and *moins*, followed by a *cardinal number* or by *demi, moitié, tiers, quart, midi, minuit,* we must translate *than*—

a. By *de,* when there is no real comparison, but simply a statement of *quantity* or *number* :—

Il vit *plus de six* vaisseaux	*he saw* more than six *ships*
Il lui donna *moins de* la *moitié*	*he gave him* less than the half
Il était *plus de minuit*	*it was later* than 12 o'clock

b. By *que,* when there is a real comparison :—

Quatre yeux voient *plus que deux*	*four eyes see* more than two
Un quart vaut *moins qu'un tiers*	*a fourth is* less than a third

(3) Adverbs of Quantity.

260.—Both the Adverbs of Negation [2] (*ne...pas, ne... point, ne...rien,* &c) and the following Adverbs take the

[1] On the *Irregular* Comparison of Adverbs, see above, § 192.
[2] See *Reasons,* &c., § 384

Preposition ***de*** after them, if they are followed by a Noun (see § 166):—

Peu,[1] moins, plus, trop, tant;
Beaucoup,[2] combien,[3] assez, autant.

261.—(4) Adverbs of Place.[4]

Ailleurs	*elsewhere*	devant	*before*
alentour	*around*	environ	*about*
auprès	*near*	ici	*here*
autre part	*elsewhere*	là	*there*
dedans	*within*	loin	*far off*
dehors	*without*	nulle part	*nowhere*
de part et d'autre	*on both sides*	n'importe où	*anywhere*
de toutes parts	*from every side*	partout	*everywhere*
derrière	*behind*	quelque part	*somewhere*
dessous	*below*	où	*where*
dessus	*above*	y	*here, there*

262.—(5) Adverbs of Time.[5]

Alors	*then*[6]	autrefois	*formerly*
après-demain	*the day after to-morrow*	avant-hier	*the day before yesterday*
aujourd-hui	*to-day*	bientôt	*soon*

[1] *Little, less, more, too much (many), so much; much, how much, enough, as much.*

[2] *Much* before the Adverb *better* (*mieux*) may be *beaucoup* or *bien*; but before the Adverb *worse* (*pis*) it must be *bien*:—

Il écrit bien (beaucoup) *mieux* que son frère	*he writes much* better *than his brother*
Il est bien *pis* aujourd'hui	*he is much* worse *to-day*

[3] *Que de* is used only in exclamations; *combien de* both in exclamations and questions:—

Que de (combien de) livres!	*what a many books!*
Combien de livres a-t-il?	*how many books has he?*

[4] See *Reasons*, &c., § 383.

[5] See *ibid.*, § 383.

[6] *Then* is translated by—

a. puis = then
b. donc = therefore
c. alors = at that time

désormais, dorénavant	*henceforth*	parfois	*sometimes*
dernièrement	*lately*	à présent	*now*
déjà	*already*	puis	*then*
demain	*to-morrow*	quand	*when*
encore	*still*	quelquefois	*sometimes*
enfin	*at last*	souvent	*often*
hier	*yesterday*	soudain	*suddenly*
jadis	*formerly*	tôt	*soon*
longtemps	*a long time*	tantôt	*soon*
maintenant	*now*	toujours	*always*
		tard	*late*

263.—(6) Adverbs of Manner and Quality.[1]

Bien[2]	*well, very*	si, aussi[3]	*so*
fort	*much, very*	volontiers	*willingly*
mal	*badly*	plutôt	*rather*
à la hâte	*in haste*	à couvert	*under covert*
à la mode	*in vogue*	de nouveau	*anew*
à tort	*wrongfully*	à genoux	*kneeling*
exprès	*expressly*	de force	*by force*
comment	*how*	à merveille	*admirably well*
comme	*like*	à peine	*hardly*
très	*much*	en vain	*vainly*
ainsi	*thus*	par conséquent	*consequently*

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 383.

[2] *a. Very*, before Adjectives and Adverbs, is in French *très*, *fort*, or *bien*: *C'est très (bien) facile ; vous savez cette règle fort mal.*

b. So very before Adjectives is generally *si*: *Il est toujours si poli*, he is always so very polite.

c. Very much is never *très beaucoup*, but simply *bien*, *beaucoup*, or *fort* (this last word especially before Past Participles) : *Ce livre me plaît beaucoup* (very much) ; *son père l'a fort grondé* (very much).

d. Very, standing by itself, may be translated differently, as will be seen from the following examples :—

Est-ce difficile ? Oui, *c'est fort (bien) difficile*	*Is it difficult ? Yes*, very
C'est absurde, n'est-ce pas ? *Oui, vraiment*	*Is not this absurd ? Yes*, very

[3] *So* is to be translated—

(1) by *si* before Adjectives and Adverbs ;

(2) by *ainsi* when used with Verbs ;

(3) by *de même* when it means : *in the same way ;*

(4) by *aussi* when it means ; *accordingly* and begins a sentence.

264.—(7) Adverbs of Affirmation and Negation.[1]

Oui[2]	*yes*	non[3]	*no*
certes	*certainly*	nullement	*by no means*
vraiment	*truly*	ne...pas[4]	*not*
sans doute	*without doubt*	ne...plus	*no...more*
ne...rien	*nothing*	ne...point	*not*
assurément	*assuredly*	ne...jamais	*never*
certainement	*certainly*	point du tout	*not at all*
si[2]	*yes*		

265.—(8) Adjectives used as Adverbs.

(1)	Haut, bas	parler haut, bas	*speak loud, low*
(2)	bon	tenir bon	*stand fast*
	bon	sentir bon	*smell nicely*
(3)	cher	coûter payer cher	*cost much, pay dearly*
(4)	court	couper court	*cut short*
(5)	faux	chanter faux	*sing incorrectly*
(6)	juste	chanter juste	*sing correctly*

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 384.

[2] After a negative question or a negative statement, *yes* is translated by *si* or *si fait*, instead of *oui*:—

Ne lui avez-vous pas encore écrit? — *have you not yet written to him?*
Si fait — Yes, I have
Il ne fait jamais ce qu'on lui dit. — *He never does what he is told.*
Si — Yes, he does

[3] The absolute negation *no* and *not* (used without a Verb) is *non*:—

Avez-vous lu le 2nd livre? *Non*, mais j'ai lu le premier
Faites attention à ce qu'il fait et *non* (or *non pas*) à ce qu'il dit

[4] *Pas, point, rien, jamais*, and *plus*, must always be accompanied by *ne* unless they are used without a Verb:—

Il n'est pas heureux. Elle n'y pense jamais
J'irai le voie, mais *pas* avec toi.

Plus d'argent = *no more money.* Y retournerez-vous? Jamais = *never.*

CHAPTER VIII.—PREPOSITIONS (PRÉPOSITIONS).[1]

266.—(1) Simple Prepositions.

À	*to, at*
après	*after*
d'après	*according to*
avant	*before*
avec	*with*
chez	*at the house of*
concernant	*concerning*
contre	*against*
dans	*in*
de	*of, from*
depuis	*since*
derrière	*behind*
dès	*from*
devant	*before*
durant	*during*
en	*in, whilst, by*
entre	*between*
envers	*towards*
environ	*about*
excepté	*except*
hormis	*except*
malgré	*in spite of*
moyennant	*by means of, on condition*
non obstant	*notwithstanding*
outre	*besides*
par	*by*
parmi	*among*
pendant	*during*
pour	*for*
sans	*without*
sauf	*save, except*
selon	*according to*
sous	*under*
suivant	*according to*
sur	*upon*
touchant	*concerning*
vers	*towards*
vu	*considering*

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 387.

(2) Compound Prepositions.

267.—*a. Prepositions which govern the Genitive.*

À l'aide de	*with the help of*	en face de	*in face of*
auprès de	*near*	à force de	*by dint of*
autour de	*round*	hors de	*out of*
à côté de	*near*	loin de	*far from*
à cause de	*on account of*	lors de	*at the time of*
en deçà de	*this side*	le long de	*along*
au delà de	*beyond*	au lieu de	*instead of*
au-dessous de	*below*	au moyen de	*by means of*
au-dessus de	*above*	à moins de	*under*
au devant de	*against*	au milieu de	*in the middle of*
en dedans de	*within*	près de	*near to*
en dépit de	*in spite of*	proche de	*near to*
ensuite de	*in consequence of*	à propos de	*with regard to*
à l'égard de	*with regard to*	au travers de	*through*
faute de	*for want of*	vis à vis de	*opposite*

268.—*b. Prepositions which govern the Dative.*

Jusqu'à jusques à	*as far as, until*
quant à	*as for, as to*
par rapport à	*with regard to*

269.—*c. Prepositions which govern the Accusative.*

À travers	*through*
d'après	*after*
par-dessous	*underneath, under*
par-dessus	*over, above*

270.—*On the Use of some of the Prepositions mentioned above.*

1. The Preposition must be placed immediately *before* its object:—

De quoi se plaignait-il ?	what *was he complaining* of ?

2. *De, en,* and *à* must be repeated before every word which they govern :—

Je vais *en* France et *en* Allemagne	*I am going* to *France and Germany*

3. All Prepositions governing a Verb require the Verb to be in the *Infinitive;* the only Preposition which is followed by the *Present Participle* is **en** :—

Il sortit *sans* rien *dire*	*he went out* without saying *anything*
Après avoir entendu l'histoire, il se mit *à rire*	after having *heard the story*, *he began* laughing
Il trembla *en* lui *donnant* la main	*he trembled* when he shook *hands with him*

CHAPTER IX.—CONJUNCTIONS.[1]

271.—(1) Co-ordinative.

A. Connective.

Et	*and*	tantôt...tantôt	*sometimes... sometimes*
ni	*nor*	ni...ni	*neither...nor*
et...et	*both...and*	non seulement ...mais encore	*not only...but also*
encore	*yet, still*	aussi	*also*
d'ailleurs	*moreover*		
au reste	*besides*		

B. Disjunctive.

Ou...ou	*either...or*	soit...soit	*be it...or*

C. Adversative.

Mais	*but*	néanmoins	*nevertheless*
cependant	*however*	toutefois	*however*
pourtant	*yet, still*		

D. Conclusive.

Car	*for*	ainsi	*thus*
or	*now* (in arguing)	partant	*therefore*
c'est pourquoi, voilà pourquoi	*that is why*	conséquemment, par conséquant, en conséquence	*consequently*
donc	*then, therefore*		

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 388.

272.—(2) Sub-ordinative.

A. Governing the Indicative Mood.

À condition que	*on condition that*
de même que / ainsi que	*as well as*
après que	*after*
vu que / attendu que	*whereas* / *seeing that*
autant que	*as much as*
aussitôt que / dès que / sitôt que	*as soon as*
au lieu que	*whereas*
depuis que	*since* (time)
durant que	*whilst*
puisque	*since*
pendant que / tandis que	*whilst*
parceque	*because*
tant que	*as long as*
à mesure que	*according as*
si	*if, whether*
lorsque / quand	*when*
à proportion que	*in proportion as*
excepté / hors que	*except that*
selon que / suivant que	*according as*

B. Governing the Subjunctive Mood.

Pour que / afin que	*in order that*
à moins que...ne	*unless*
avant que	*before*
bien que / quoique	*although*
de peur que / de crainte que	*for fear that*
au cas que / en cas que	*in case*
loin que	*far from*
non que / non pas que	*not that*
malgré que / non obstant que	*notwithstanding*
pourvu que	*provided that*
sans que	*without*
soit que...ou que	*whether...or*
posé que / supposé que	*suppose that*
pour peu que / si peu que	*however little*

C. Governing either the Indicative or the Subjunctive.

Que	*that*
de façon que / de manière que / de sorte que / en sorte que	*so that*
au lieu que	*whereas*
selon que	*according as*
sinon que	*except that*
jusqu'à ce que	*until*

D. Governing the Infinitive Mood.

Afin de	*in order to*	de crainte de	*for fear of*
avant de	*before*	de peur de	*for fear of*
à moins de	*unless*	loin de	*far from*
au lieu de	*instead of*	plutôt que	*rather than*
faute de	*for want of*	pour	*in order to*

CHAPTER X.—INTERJECTIONS.[1]

273.—

(1) *Joy:* ah ! bon !
(2) *Grief and pain:* ah ! aïe ! hélas ! ouf !
(3) *Surprise:* ha ! oh ! ô !
(4) *Disgust:* fi ! fi donc ! pouah ! foin !
(5) *Silence:* st ! chut !
(6) *Calling out to some one:* hé ! hé là-bas ! holà !

274.—*Words or Phrases used as Interjections.*

Allons ! alerte ! en avant ! courage !	*come, forwards, cheer up*
tiens ! quoi ! vraiment ! par exemple !	*what ! indeed !*
tiens, tiens !	*dear me !*
gare !	*mind ! take care !*
au voleur ! à l'assassin !	*thieves ! murder !*
au secours !	*help !*
au feu !	*fire !*
au loup ! au chien enragé !	*a wolf ! a mad dog !*
la garde !	*policeman !*
aux armes !	*to arms !*
tout beau !	*softly !*

[1] See *Reasons*, &c., § 390.

B. REASONS AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

INTRODUCTION.

I. Classification.

275.—French forms part of the group of Languages which have sprung from Latin, and which are known by the common name of the **Romance Languages.** They are the following :—

(1) *Italian,*	spoken in	*Italy.*
(2) *Spanish*	„	*Spain.*
(3) *Portuguese*	„	*Portugal.*
(4) *French*	„	*France.*
(5) *Provençal*	„	*South of France.*
(6) *Rouman*	„	*Moldavia and Wallachia.*
(7) *Chur-Wälsch*	„	*East of Switzerland.*

II. Elements of the French Language.

276.—The fundamental element of French is *Popular Latin* (see *D*), which, on the soil of France, came in contact with several other languages.

A. When the Romans under Cæsar came to Gaul, they found the greater part of France occupied by the *Gauls* or *Kelts*, on whom, after a severe struggle, they forced, in a very short time, their customs, their religion, and their language.

The *Keltic Tongue* was almost entirely supplanted by *Latin*, so that it left in the French language only very faint traces of its existence—about 200 words.

B. About 600 B.C., *Phocean* merchants founded a Greek colony—*Massilia*, Marseille—and spread the language and civilization of *Greece* over the southern part of France. Partly through them, partly owing to the introduction of Christianity and to the study of classical antiquity, a certain number of Greek words have found admittance into French.

C. The influence of *German* on French is much greater than that of any of the languages just named. This is to be accounted for by the fact that Gaul was for centuries overrun by the various Teutonic tribes. As early as the third century, Germans settled in northern Gaul. But it was especially in the fifth century, at the time of the great Migration of Peoples, that France had to suffer most from the inroads of the Teutons. The country was at first occupied—for a short time only—by the *Vandals* and *Sueves* before they crossed the Pyrenees.

The south-western part of France, and the centre as far as the Loire, were then occupied by the *Westgoths;* the south-eastern part by the *Burgundians;* whilst in the north, *Chlodwig* founded the powerful kingdom of the *Franks*, which extended as far as the Loire.

The consequence of these various occupations of the land was the introduction into French of a great number

of words of Teutonic origin, especially such as related to the new institutions the Franks had brought with them. Thus, nearly all the expressions connected with *warfare* and with the organization of the *feudal system* are of German origin. Teutonic words relating to *naval* affairs were principally introduced into French by the Normans, who, like the Franks, soon forgot their own language and adopted that of the people they had conquered. The number of words derived from the Teutonic languages is about 500.

D. It is true that all these various elements[1] admitted into, and assimilated by, the French language have enriched its *vocabulary* in many respects, but they have exercised scarcely any influence on the *structure* of the French *language itself, on the organic development of its syntax.*

The foundation of French, *i.e.* that which really constitutes its individuality as a distinct language, is solely *Latin.*

Having founded the first colony in the south of Gaul as early as B.C. 121, the *Romans* extended their dominion every year, until Cæsar (B.C. 58—49) subjugated the whole country, and forced upon its inhabitants, as already mentioned, the language of the Romans, with their institutions, social, political, and religious. This language was not the polished idiom of the lettered and highly educated classes, but the common speech of the people—the words and expressions used in every-day life. This *popular language*, called the *lingua vulgaris* (*rustica*) or *lingua Romana*, is the fountain from which French and, generally speaking, all the Romance lan-

[1] The number of *Hebrew* and *Arabic* words which have passed into French is so small, that they have exercised no influence at all on the French language. *English*, *Spanish*, and *Italian* words have been admitted into French since the sixteenth century.

guages have sprung. It soon absorbed all those languages with which it came in contact. Even in the first century after the Conquest, it was spoken in the greater part of Gaul instead of the old *Keltic language*, which had to seek a refuge in the province of Armorica. When afterwards, in the fifth century, France was overswept by the warlike and unruly tribes which Germany unceasingly poured forth, the common Latin tongue may be said to have been so firmly established, that it was able not only successfully to withstand the influences of the German-speaking populations, but also to force even the conquerors and new masters of the land to give up their own language in order to learn that of the conquered. After a few centuries, the Franks had forgotten their own tongue—a fact of which we find a proof in the oath which, in 842, king *Louis the German* took to his brother *Charles* and his army at *Strasburg*. This oath was in *French*, because the Frankish soldiery no longer understood German :—

French of the Ninth Century.

Pro Deo amur et pro christian poplo et nostro commun salvament, d'ist di en avant, in quant deus savir et podir me dunat, si salvarai eo cist meon fradre Karlo et in adjudha et in cadhuna cosa si cum om per dreit son fradra salvar dist, in o quid il mi altresi fazet, et ab Ludher nul plaid numquam prindrai, qui meon vol cist meon fradre Karle in damno sit.

Modern French.

Pour l'amour de Dieu et pour le peuple chrétien et notre commun salut, de ce jour en avant (*à compter de ce jour*) autant que Dieu m'en donne le savoir et le pouvoir, ainsi défendrai je celui mon frère Charles et en aide et en chaque chose, ainsi comme par droit, on doit défendre son frère, pourvu qu'il me fasse de même ; et avec Lothaire je ne prendrai (*ferai*) jamais aucun accord qui, par ma volonté, soit en dommage à celui-ci, mon frère Charles.

This is, except a short glossary—the *Glosses of Reichenau* of the year 768, which contain only single words—the first written document that has been handed down to us of the French language, as it had during eight centuries gradually developed itself from the *Latin Popular Idiom.*

III. Old French and Provencal.

277.—During the many centuries when *Popular Latin* was spreading in Gaul, the northern and southern parts of that country were, politically speaking, independent of each other. The South had little in common with the North, since either had its characteristic peculiarities, founded on a difference of race; for the South had been more thickly peopled by the Romans than the North. It was but natural that, in adopting and pronouncing the same language, each part should have its own peculiar method. Thus it came to pass that *Popular Latin* produced, on the soil of France, two distinct idioms: the *Langue d'oc* or *Provençal*—which was spoken in the South of France as far as the Loire—and the *Langue d'oïl* or Old French, obtaining in the provinces north of that river.[1]

Whilst the *Langue d'oc*, after having, through the melodious songs of the *Troubadours*, enjoyed a short but brilliant period of celebrity, ceased in the fourteenth century to be used as a written language, the *Langue d'oïl*, or *Old French*, became the language of the country

[1] The origin and explanation of these names is to be found in the circumstance that these languages were called after their particles of affirmation: the term for *yes* was *oc* in the south and *oïl* in the north. (On the derivation of *oïl*, see § 386.)

at large. Since the first written documents we possess of it, are of the year 842 (or 768; see § 276), we may place its commencement at the beginning of the ninth century. Accurately to determine when it came to an end is a matter of great difficulty, or, correctly speaking, impossibility, since the change of *Old* into *Modern French* has been but gradual. We are perhaps not far from the truth in assuming (for reasons which will be stated in the following section) that, in the course of the fourteenth century, *Old French* enters on a new phase of its history, and that with the fifteenth century, the reign of *Modern French*, its offspring, begins.

IV. Modern French.

278.—*a. French becomes an Analytic Language.*

In the preceding section we have seen that the language imported by the Romans into Gaul, and finally adopted and spoken by its inhabitants, was Latin—Popular Latin. Although it was spoken by a race of men so different from the Romans; although it had admitted a certain number of words belonging to the various nations who had been occupying different parts of Gaul, it nevertheless retained its specific characteristics as a *Latin* language, so that *Modern French* may be said to be its *natural continuation and development.*

However different from Latin Modern French may be to the eye of a superficial observer, yet Comparative Philology enables us to see that it is in the main the same language, and that the transformation, as far

as it has taken place, has been brought about only in accordance with certain well-known laws, obtaining not only in the French, but also in the other Romance Languages.

One of the principal points of difference between *Latin* and *French* consists in the former being a *synthetic*, the latter an *analytic* language; *i.e.* Latin could express the relation of words to each other by the *form* of the words (by the various cases of the Nouns and by the terminations of the Verbs), French only by their *position* or *by prepositions.* Latin *filium amat pater* must be in French *le père aime le fils; liber discipuli* = *le livre* de *l'élève.*

It is obvious that a language cannot suddenly from being synthetic become analytic. As to French, it is highly interesting to notice how this change was brought about gradually, step by step. Of this fact we can have no better proof than by turning to the history of the language as regards *Declension.* The following paradigm gives a view of these changes :—

1st Per. Synthetic	= *Latin*	= 5 Declens. & 6 Cases	
2nd Per. Half-Synth.	= *Old Fr.*	(*a*) 9th—12th cent.	= 3 Declens. & 2 Cases
		(*b*) 12th—14th cent.	= 1 Declens. & 2 Cases
3rd Per. Analytic	= *Mod. Fr.*	14th cent. till now	= no Declens.; 1 Case

In explanation of this paradigm, the following remarks may find a place here.

Already at a very early period there are signs in the Latin language of a tendency to reduce the number of cases by frequently using prepositions instead. This tendency increased after the popular idiom of the Latin language had been brought by the Romans into Gaul and adopted by its inhabitants. The result was that

Popular Latin, when it had, during about eight centuries, gradually been changed into a new language—or rather, when it had *entered upon a new phase* of its history and taken the name of *French* and *Provençal*—showed that the *five* Latin Declensions had been reduced to *three* and the *six* Latin cases to *two*, viz. the *Nominative* or *Subjective Case*, and the *Accusative* or *Objective Case*.

Further, the period of transition from Latin to Modern French, which, very appropriately, has been called the *half-synthetic period* of French—since it is an intermediate phase between *Synthesis* as represented by Latin, and *Analysis* as represented by French—is marked by the Old French Declension itself, and may be divided into two subdivisions. During the first of these, which extends from the ninth to the twelfth century, there are three Declensions, corresponding to the three first Latin Declensions, and in each of these there are two Cases in each number :—

		Subj. Case.	Object. Case.
I.	Sing.	*coron-e*	*coron-e*
	Plur.	*coron-es*	*coron-es*
II.	Sing.	*an-s*	*an*
	Plur.	*an*	*an-s*
III.	Sing.	*volént-es*	*volent-é*
	Plur.	*volent-es*	*volent-es*

During the second, which lasts from the twelfth to the fourteenth century, there are still two Cases in each number; but there remains only one—the second—

Declension, to the laws of which the words of the two other Declensions had to submit:—

	Subj. Case.		Object. Case.	
Sing.	ann-us	*ans*	ann-um	*an*
Plur.	ann-i	*an*	ann-os	*ans*

But even this last reminiscence of the Latin Declensions had to give way before the powerful tendency of the language towards simplification. We may say that about the end of the fourteenth century, the distinction between the Subjective and Objective cases had perished. From that time dates Modern French, which has *no Declension*, and which possesses only one case for each number—*the Latin Accusative:* enfant = *in*fan*tem;* faucon = *fal*con*em;* seigneur = *se*nior*em;* chanteur = *can*tor*em.* The reason why this case was retained in preference to the Nominative seems to have been that, on account of its longer form, it impressed itself much more easily on the memory of the people, as it generally showed the *crude form*, i.e. the most important part of a word, and that it was of more frequent occurrence than any other case.[1]

For the small number of words which are derived from the Nominative, see § 338.

b. Why French Nouns generally mark their Plural by the addition of an **s.**

Intimately connected with the adoption of the Latin

[1] Words like *femme, homme, pomme, rien, amertume, enclume, mon, ton, son* (feminam, hominem, pomum, rem, amaritudinem, incudinem, meum, tuum, suum); the Spanish *quien* (Lat. quem) and forms like *corps, temps* (which cannot have been derived from *corpor-is, corpor-i*, or *corpor-e*, but only from *corpus;* the same reasoning applies to *tempus*) very forcibly tend to confirm the view that the *Accusative*, and not the *Genitive* or *Dative* or *Ablative*, was the case which was taken as the type of French Nouns.

Accusative as the type of all those parts of speech which were declinable in Latin, is the choice of *s* as the distinctive mark of the *Plural.* We have seen above (p. 182) that in Old French—*i.e.* during the half-synthetic period —the *s* of *ans* (representing the Latin ann-**us**) served, in the Singular, to distinguish the Nominative from the Accusative *an* (Lat. *ann*-**um**); and, in the Plural, the Accusative *ans* (Lat. *ann*-**os**) from the Nominative *an* (Lat. *ann*-**i**). When afterwards the Nominative cases of both numbers were dropped (see p. 182), there remained only—

Sing. *an*
Plur. *ans*

Thus it has happened that in French the Plural of Nouns is formed by adding *s* to the Singular. *This s was originally the distinctive mark of the* **Cases**; *it has now become the distinguishing sign of the* **Numbers.**

c. Why some Nouns form their Plural in **aux.**

From the subjoined paradigm—

Subj. Case.		Object. Case.	
caball-us	*cheval-s*	caball-i	*cheval*
caball-i	*cheval*	caball-os	*cheval-s* (*cheval-x*)

we see that, after the Subjective Case of both numbers had perished, there remained for the Singular *cheval* and for the Plural *cheval-s* or *cheval-x*, because *x*,[1] in prefer-

[1] As orthographic signs, the letters *s*, *x*, and *z* were, generally speaking, equivalent in Old French. We find, e.g., *paix, pais, paiz; voix, vois, voiz*: we still have the form *nez* (nasus), *chez* (casa), *rez* (rasus).

The following distinction, however, used to be made: *x* was principally added to words ending in *l* or in *u* (thus we have all those forms in *aux, oux, eux; maux, bijoux, feux*), and *z* was added to words ending in *t*, or it served to represent Lat. *ts, ds: toz* (= *tot's, totos*), *piez* (= *ped's, pedes*). These forms in *z* were preserved till the seventeenth century in Nouns and

ence to *s*, was added to Nouns ending in *l*. But here we have to bear in mind the phonetic law, according to which Latin *l* is generally changed into *u* when it comes to stand before a consonant (p*al*ma = p*au*me, *al*ba = *au*be, *fal*conem = f*au*con, abs*ol*vere = abs*ou*dre). Thus *cheval-x* became *chevau-x*, and this explains the fact that the formation of the Plural in *aux* of the greater part of Nouns in *al* (see § 170 (2)) is, etymologically speaking, quite regular.

I. VERBS.

I. Division of the Verbs.

279.—The four *Latin* Conjugations may be divided into two classes—the *Vowel* and the *Consonant Conjugation*. The latter includes Verbs whose crude form ends in a *consonant* or in *u* (*v*), viz. the *third* conjugation of Latin grammars (*em-ere*); the former comprises Verbs whose crude form ends in one of the vowels *a*, *e*, *i*, viz. the *first*, *second*, and *fourth* conjugations of ordinary grammars (*am*a-*re*, *del*e-*re*, *fin*i-*re*).

280.—The chief difference of these two classes of conjugations consists in their way of forming the *Perfect*: the first-named class accentuate the *root* (em-*i*, carp-*si*, leg-*i*), the other accentuate only the *connecting vowel* (*am*a-*vi*, *del*e-*vi*, *fin*i-*vi*).

Participles ending in *é*, which originally represented Lat. *at*: verit-*ez*, clart-*ez*, cit-*ez* = verit-*ats*, &c. Similarly in Verbs: chant-*ez* (=cant-*at's*, cant-*atis*), See § 305.

281.—If we apply this principle to the *French* Verbs, we shall see that all of them may, like the Latin Verbs, be divided into two classes, according as they form their *Preterite Definite.* The one class, which comprehends the Verbs of the third conjugation of ordinary French grammars and all the so-called Irregular Verbs, in forming that tense put the accent on the *root*[1] of the Verb: *dev-oir*, **dus**; *sav-oir*, **sus**; *ten-ir*, **tins.**[2] The other class, comprising the Verbs of the first, second, and fourth conjugations of ordinary grammars, form the Preterite by accentuating the termination: *parl-er*, *parl-*ai; *bann-ir*, *bann-***is**; *vend-re*, *vend-***is.** We shall call *Weak* all the Verbs belonging to these three conjugations (because they require for the formation of the Preterite Definite the *help*—if we may use the expression—of an additional syllable), whilst the former will be named *Strong* Verbs (because their root alone suffices to form the Preterite).[3]

282.—We purposely avoid the term "*Irregular Verbs*," because they are in their way not less regular than the others; they only follow another way of conjugation. "Irregularity presupposes formations which, for whatever cause, have deviated from the typical form; but in the

[1] The *root* or crude form of any Verb is generally found by cutting off the terminations *-er*, *-ir*, *-re*, *-oir* of the Infinitive (parl-*er*, fin-*ir*, vend-*re*, dev-*oir*). Yet in *voir*, the vowel of the root has coalesced with that of the termination, so that it is impossible to distinguish the latter from the former; in Old French the two parts of this Verb were still ve-*oir* (vi-d-*ere*). See § 294.

The root of Verbs in *-eindre*, *-oindre*, *-aindre* (ceindre, joindre, craindre = cing-*ere*, jung-*ere*, trem-*ere* [O. Fr. crem-*er*]) ends in *-ein*, *-oin*, *-ain*, since the *d* of this class of Verbs has been intercalated only for the sake of facilitating the pronunciation of *n* followed by *r* (cei*n*-re, joi*n*-*re*, crai*n*-*re*). See § 313, note 8 to *vouloir*.

[2] If, in these Verbs, the *termination* had been accented in the Preterite Definite instead of the *root*, we should have forms like the following: *dev-***us**, *sav-***us**, *ten-***is.**

[3] The term "*Strong* and *Weak Verbs*," proposed by *Diez*, has been accepted by French scholars who are now to be considered as the first authorities in France as regards everything relating to the history, origin, and formation of the French language, viz. *Littré*, *Paris*, *Brachet*.

case of the Strong Verbs (hitherto called *Irregular*) no such deviation has taken place: *they are as regular as any others, only they obey a different law.*" The terms "*Regular*" and "*Irregular*" do but state a fact at best; but the distinction between *Strong* and *Weak* penetrates deeper, and expresses a *theory*.

II. Weak Verbs.

283.—*First Conjugation.* Most Verbs of this conjugation are derived from Latin Verbs in *are*, which termination is regularly changed into *er*: *port-are*, *port*-**er**; *cre-are*, *cré* **er.**

284.—*Second Conjugation.* The Verbs of this conjugation must be subdivided into two classes:—

A. Verbs of the simple or primitive form;

B. Verbs of the enlarged or inchoative form.

285.—These latter are derived from Verbs which, in Latin, were called *inchoative* or *inceptive*, because they expressed a gradual augmentation of the action implied by the simple Verb, as *nigrescere*, to become more and more dark; *rubescere*, to grow more and more red. Their characteristic syllable *esc*, became in French *iss* before a vowel, and simply *i* before a consonant; it was interpolated between the *root* and the *termination* (fleur-*iss*-ons, fleur-*iss*-ant) in the following five tenses:—

(1) *The Present Indicative* (a principal tense)—[1]

bann-*i*-s	bann-*iss*-ons
bann-*i*-s	bann-*iss*-ez
bann-*i*-t	bann-*iss*-ent

[1] See the table of the Derivation of the Tenses.

(2) *The Present Subjunctive* (a derived tense)—[1]

bann-*iss*-e	bann-*iss*-ions
bann-*iss*-es	bann-*iss*-iez
bann-*iss*-e	bann-*iss*-ent

(3) *The Imperative* (a derived tense)—[1]

—	bann-*iss*-ons
bann-*i*-s	bann-*iss*-ez
bann-*iss*-e	bann-*iss*-ent

(4) *The Present Participle* (a principal tense)—[1]

bann-*iss*-ant

(5) *The Imperfect* (a derived tense)—[1]

bann-*iss*-ais	bann-*iss*-ions
bann-*iss*-ais	bann-*iss*-iez
bann-*iss*-ait	bann-*iss*-aient

The syllable *iss* was, however, refused to the following five tenses :—

(1) *To the Infinitive bann-ir* (not bann-*iss*-ir), and consequently
(2) *To the Future bann-ir-ai*, and
(3) *To the Conditional bann-ir-ais*, which are both derived from the *Infinitive;*
(4) *To the Preterite Definite Indicative bann-is* and consequently
(5) *To the Preterite Definite Subjunctive bann-isse*, which is derived from the *Indicative* of the same tense.

[1] See the table of the Derivation of the Tenses.

286.—*Bénir* is conjugated like *bannir*, only it has a double form in the Past Participle *béni* and *bénit;* this latter, which we are now accustomed to consider as irregular, is a reminiscence of the original form of the Past Participle, which in Old French always ended in *t* (*chantat, florit, partit, venduit*).

This Verb is derived from *benedicere;* as *dicere* has produced *dire, benedicere* has gradually been changed into *benedir, beneir*, and lastly *bénir*.

287.—As to the Verbs of the *simple* or *primitive* form, they correspond to the Latin Verbs of the *fourth* conjugation, which they exactly follow in all their tenses; they are the following: *sentir, mentir, repentir; dormir, partir, servir, sortir; ouvrir, couvrir, souffrir, offrir; assaillir, tressaillir, saillir; cueillir; bouillir; fuir, vêtir.* (See §§ 40—48.)

288.—*Third Conjugation.* There is only one remark to make on the Verbs of the third conjugation (the fourth in other French grammars), viz. that they are derived partly from Latin Verbs in *ĕre: vendre, vendĕre; pendre, pendĕre:* partly from a small number of Verbs in *ēre*: *respondēre, tondēre, mordēre*, which, through a misplacement of the accent, came to be pronounced *respóndĕre, tóndĕre, mórdĕre*, and consequently produced quite regularly the French Verbs *répóndre, tóndre, mórdre.*

III. Voices and Moods generally.

289.—In comparing the French to the Latin conjugations we cannot help being struck with the close resemblance existing between them. Yet the following changes and losses of inflections are to be noticed.

290.—*The Passive Voice*, being defective even in Latin, was, in the Perfect tenses of that language, formed by means of the Passive Participle, and the Verb *esse* (*Amatus est, erat*, &c.). This method of conjugation was extended to all tenses and moods,[1] in French as well as in English and German. Thus the Latin Passive Voice has been suppressed, and been replaced in French by the Periphrastic Conjugation formed by the Past Participle and the Verb *être* (*il est, était, fut*, &c. *aimé.*

291.—The Latin *Deponent* Verbs, in passing into French, assumed the active form: *imitari, imitare, imiter; consolari, consolare, consoler.* Thus *suivent, naissent* have been derived from se*quunt*, nas*cunt*, and not from se*quuntur*, nas*cuntur*, which would have produced sui*vont*, nais*sont.*

292.—As many *Passive* Verbs had a purely *reflective* meaning in Latin (*commoveor, delector, mutor*), this close connection between Passive and Reflective Verbs has been the cause why the Latin Passive Voice and the Deponent are often expressed in French by the Reflective Verb. *Nihil videbatur, rien ne s'y voyait. Spectaculum dabatur, un spectacle se donnait.*

293.—The *Supines* and *Gerunds* have disappeared.

294.—In Latin as well as in French, the Definite **Tense** of a Verb expresses:—

(1) The *Action.*

(2) The *Time* in which that action takes place

(3) The *Person* who does the action.

[1] The *Past Particpl.* is the *only* remnant in French of the Latin Passive Voice; *amatus, aimé.*

To these three elements correspond three different parts of the Verb :—

(1) The *Root* or *Crude form* expressing the *Action.*

(2) Certain *Syllables* or *Letters* added to the root and expressing the *Time.*

(3) The *Person-ending* which indicates the *Person* who accomplishes the action.

If we take, for instance, the 1st Person Plural of the Perfect in Latin (*canta-vi-mus*), and of the Pret. Def. in French (*chantâmes*) of the Verb **cantare**, *chanter*, we shall find that :—

(1) **Canta-** (Fr. *chant-*) is the *root* expressing the *action of singing:* this root remains the same throughout all the tenses of the Verb.

(2) **Vi-** (Fr. *â-*) indicates the *time* in which the action of singing takes place, *i.e.* in this case in the *Past.*

(3) **Mus** (Fr. *mes*) tells us the *person* who causes this action to take place, *i.e. we.*

Thus, the whole Perf. Tense would be :—

	Latin.			*Old French.*			*Modern French.*		
	I.	II.	III.	I.	II.	III.	I.	II.	III.
(1)	canta	v	i	chant	a	i	chant	a	i
	canta	(vi)s	ti	chant	as	—	chant	as	—
	canta	vi	t	chant	a	t	chant	a	—
	canta	vi	mus	chant	a(s)	mes	chant	â	mes
	canta	(vi)s	tis	chant	as	tes	chant	â	tes
	canta	(ve)r	unt	chant	ar	ent	chant	èr	ent
(2)	vid	i	—	vi	—	—	vi	—	s
	vid	is	ti	ve	ïs	—	v	is	—
	vid	i	t	vi	—	t	vi	—	t
	vid	i	mus	ve	ï(s)	mes	v	î	mes
	vid	is	tis	ve	ï(s)	tes	v	î	tes
	vid	er	unt	vi	r	ent	vi	r	ent

3)	fec	i	—	fis	—	—	fi	—	s
	fec	is	ti	fe	ïs	—	f	is	—
	fec	i	t	fis	—	t	fi	—	t
	fec	i	mus	fe	ï(s)	mes	f	î	mes
	fec	is	tis	fe	ï(s)	tes	f	î	tes
	fec	er	unt	fi	r	ent	fi	r	ent

Since in Modern French there are few forms only in which we are still able clearly to distinguish the three parts of each Verbal form: the *root*, the *sign of the tense*, and the *person-ending*, we have not separated the two latter in the following Tables of Latin and French terminations (§ 295—298).

Note.—For the formation of the *Future* and the *Conditional*, see § 310.

In Latin, all the tenses were formed by terminations; in French, the Past Tenses, with the exception of the Imperfect and the Preter. Def., must be formed by *avoir* and the Past Participle: *j'ai*, *j'avais*, *j'eus parlé*, &c.

295.—It is a well-established rule that French words have faithfully kept the *tonic accent*[1] on the same syllable as in Latin, *i.e.* that syllable which is accented in Latin, is also accented in French: amántem, aimánt; pópulus, peúple; inviolábilis, inviolável; pietátem, piété.

On the form of French words, on the nature of their consonants, and especially on that of their vowels, nothing has exercised a more profound influence than this *tonic accent*, which, very appropriately, has been called the *very soul* of the word. Let us, for instance, consider the Present (Ind. and Subj.) of *tenere*, *tenir*.

[1] The *tonic* accent must not be confounded with the *syllabic* accent; a word may have more than one *syllabic* accent, or none at all (*peuple*, *bonté*, *piété*); but each word (whether French, German, English, Latin, &c.) has a *tonic* accent, and it has never more than *one* (piété).

Indicative.				Subjunctive.			
tén	eo	ti*é*n	s	tén	eam	ti*é*nn	e
tén	es	ti*é*n	s	tén	eas	ti*é*nn	es
tén	et	ti*é*n	t	tén	eat	ti*é*nn	e
ten	émus	t*e*n	óns	ten	eámus	t*e*n	ións
ten	étis	t*e*n	éz	ten	eátis	t*e*n	iéz
tén	ent	ti*é*nn	ent	tén	eant	ti*é*nn	ent

296.—The radical vowel *e* of *tenir* has been reinforced in the 3 Persons Sing. and in the 3rd Pers. Plur., because the tonic accent rests on the first syllable; in the 1st and 2nd Pers. Plur. the original *e* reappears because the accent has passed on the following syllable. Thus we see that the accent does not only fix and determine the nature of the vowel on which it is placed, but that its influence extends even on the vowels of a preceding syllable. The following Vowel changes (*reinforcements of the Vowel*) regularly take place whenever the vowels *e, é, a(l), ou, a, oi*, come to stand in that syllable on which the tonic accent rests, viz. :—

(1) e = ie : (c*é*leste ci*e*l ; s*é*culier si*è*cle)
v*e*nir v*ie*ns ; acqu*é*rir acqu*ie*rs
t*e*nir t*ie*ns ; ass*e*oir ass*ie*ds

Pres. Ind. v*ie*n-s, -s, -t
v*e*n-ons, -ez
v*ie*nn-ent

Subj. v*ie*nn-e, -es, -e
v*e*n-ions, -iez
v*ie*nn-ent

(2) e, é = è : (ch*e*vreau ch*è*vre ; Bohémien Bohème)
m*e*ner m*è*ne ; r*é*gler r*è*gle

Pres. Ind. m*è*n-e, -es, -e[1]
m*e*n-ons, -ez
m*è*n-ent

Subj. m*è*n-e, -es, -e
m*e*n-ions, -iez
m*è*n-ent

[1] This explains to us the peculiarities not only of the Verbs mentioned in §§ 51 and 52, but also of those cited in § 53, viz. Verbs in *eler* and *eter*. For here

(3) **e, é = oi:** (espérer espoir; créance croire)
devoir dois; recevoir recois [1]

Pres. Ind.		Subj.	
doi-s, -s, -t		doiv-e, -es, e	
dev-ons, -ez		dev-ions, -iez	
doiv-ent		doiv-ent	

(4) **al = au:** (*al*térer *au*tre; cha*al*eur cha*u*d)
val*o*ir va*u*x; fal*l*oir fa*u*t

Pres. Ind.		Subj.	
vau-x,[2] -x, -t		vaill-e,[3] -es, -e	
val-ons, -ez		val-ions, -iez	
val-ent [4]		vaill-ent	

(5) **ou = eu:** (langoureux langueur; avouer aveu)
mourir meurs; mouvoir meus
pouvoir peux; vouloir veux

Pres. Ind.		Subj.	
1. meur-s, -s, -t		meur-e, -es, -e	
mour-ons, -ez		mour-ions, -iez	
meur-ent		meur-ent	
2. veu-x,[4] -x, -t		veuill-e,[3] -es, -e	
voul-ons, -ez		voul-ions, -iez	
veul-ent		veuill-ent	

also a reinforcement of the unaccented *e* takes place, as soon as it comes to stand in a syllable which has the tonic accent:—

appell-e, -es, -e	jett-e, -es, -e
appel-ons, -ez	jet-ons, -ez
appell-ent	jett-ent

It is true that in this case the reinforcement of the *e* is not visible to the eye, but the fact that the nature and sound of the *e* is a different one in appelons and in appelle, in jetons and jette, is sufficiently marked by the reduplication of the *l* and the *t* respectively.

[1] Add to this class of Verbs all Verbs in *cevoir*: *apercevoir*, *concevoir*, &c.

[2] We have already seen (§ 278, *c*, note; see also § 300) that *x* was generally added to Nouns ending in *l*. This has also been the case with the Pres. Ind. of *val-oir* and *voul-oir*. Thus *val-x* (instead of *val-s*) has become *vau-x*.—Why is *al* in *valent* not changed into *au*? Because the *l* of the *accented* syllable *al* is changed into *au*, only when it is followed by a consonant: cha*l*-eûr, cha*u*-d.

[3] From the preceding remark it appears that the *al* of *valẽam* could not be changed into *au* on account of the *ẽa* in the following syllable. This *ẽa* was regularly changed into *ie*: *talẽa(m)*, *palẽa(m)* = *talie*, *palie*; then *li* was changed into *il*: *taille*, *paille*: thus *valẽa(m)*, *valie*, *vaille*, and *volẽã(m)* [not *velim*], *volie*, *voille*, *veuille*.

[4] See Note 2.

3. p*eu*-x, -x, -t		p*uiss*-e, -es, -e [1]
p*ou*v-ons		p*uiss*-ions, -iez
p*eu*v-ent		p*uiss*-ent

(6) a = ai: cl*a*rté cl*air*; hum*a*nité hum*ain*
s*a*voir s*ais*

Pres. Ind.	s*ai*-s, -s, -t	Subj.	s*ach*-e, -es, -e [2]
	s*av*-ons, -ez		sach-ions, -iez
	s*av*-ent		sach-ent

(7) oi = u: b*oi*re b*uv*ons

Pres. Ind.	b*oi*-s, -s, -t	Subj.	b*oiv*-e, -es, -e
	b*uv*-ons, -ez		b*uv*-ions, -iez
	b*oiv*-ent		b*oiv*-ent

297.—After the foregoing remarks it will be easy to see that a certain number of Verbal tenses (or moods), which at first sight seemed remarkable for their irregularity, only tend to show that they are the result of a phonetic *law* which acts throughout with wonderful uniformity. We now detect the greatest harmony where before we were inclined to see only confusion and arbitrary choice.

IV. Table of Latin and French Terminations.

298.—*A. First Conjugation.* - **Cant-are,** *chan-ter.*

[1] Lat. *þossim* (or *þoteam* ?); O. Fr. *þoisse;* Mod. Fr. *þuisse.* (For the change of *o* into *ui*, compare o*stium*, *þost* — *huis*, *þuis*).

[2] The *i* of *ia, ie, io, iu*, was changed into *j* or *g* after a soft consonant (*d, b, g*), and into *ch* after a hard consonant (*tłbiam, rábiem, þipiónem, þróþium* = *tłbje, rábje, þipjón, þróþche*). In order to avoid the harshness of sound produced by the consonants *bj, þj, þch*, the first of them was regularly elided; thus we get *tłge, rážge, þigeón, þróche.* This explains the gradual changes of *sapia(m), sapche, sache.*

Present Indicative.

cant-*o*	chant-*e*
cant-*as*	chant-*es*
cant-*at*	chant-*e*
cant-*amus*	chant-*ons*
cant-*atis*	chant-*ez*
cant-*ant*	chant-*ent*

Present Subjunctive.

cant-*em*	chant-*e*
cant-*es*	chant-*es*
cant-*et*	chant-*e*
cant-*emus*	chant-*ions*
cant-*etis*	chant-*iez*
cant-*ent*	chant-*ent*

Preterite Indicative.

cant-*a(v)i*	chant-*ai*
cant-*a(vi)sti*	chant-*as*
cant-*a(vi)t*	chant-*a*
cant-*a(vi)mus*	chant-*âmes*
cant-*a(vi)stis*	chant-*âtes*
cant-*a(ve)runt*	chant-*èrent*

Preterite Subjunctive.

cant-*a(vi)ssem*	chant-*asse*
cant-*a(vi)sses*	chant-*asses*
cant-*a(vi)sset*	chant-*ât*
cant-*a(vi)ssemus*	chant-*assions*
cant-*a(vi)ssetis*	chant-*assiez*
cant-*a(vi)ssent*	chant-*assent*

Imperfect.

cant-*abam*	chant-*ais*
cant-*abas*	chant-*ais*
cant-*abat*	chant-*ait*
cant-*abamus*	chant-*ions*
cant-*abatis*	chant-*iez*
cant-*abant*	chant-*aient*

Imperative.

cant-*a*	chant-*e*

Present Participle.

cant-*ant(em)*	chant-*ant*

Past Participle.

cant-*at(us)*	chant-*é*

B. Second Conjugation.

a. Inchoative: **Flor-ere**, *fleur-ir.*

Present Indicative.

flor-esc-*o*	fleur-i-*s*
flor-esc-*is*	fleur-i-*s*
flor-esc-*it*	fleur-i-*t*
flor-esc-*imus*	fleur-iss-*ons*
flor-esc-*itis*	fleur-iss-*ez*
flor-esc-*unt*	fleur-iss-*ent*

Present Subjunctive.

flor-esc-*am*	fleur-iss-*e*
flor-esc-*as*	fleur-iss-*es*
flor-esc-*at*	fleur-iss-*e*
flor-esc-*amus*	fleur-iss-*ions*
flor-esc-*atis*	fleur-iss-*iez*
flor-esc-*ant*	fleur-iss-*ent*

Imperfect.

flor-esc-*ebam*	fleur-iss-*ais*
flor-esc-*ebas*	fleur-iss-*ais*
flor-esc-*ebat*	fleur-iss-*ait*
flor-esc-*ebamus*	fleur-iss-*ions*
flor-esc-*ebatis*	fleur-iss-*iez*
flor-esc-*ebant*	fleur-iss-*aient*

Imperative.

flor-esc-*e*	fleur-i-*s*

Present Participle.

flor-esc-*ent(em)*	fleur-iss-*ant*

b. Non-inchoative : Serv-ire, *serv-ir.*

Present Indicative.	
serv-*io*	ser-*s*
serv-*is*	ser-*s*
serv-*it*	ser-*t*
serv-*imus*	serv-*ons*
serv-*itis*	serv-*ez*
serv-*iunt*	serv-*ent*

Present Subjunctive.	
serv-*iam*	serv-*e*
serv-*ias*	serv-*es*
serv-*iat*	serv-*e*
serv-*iamus*	serv-*ions*
serv-*iatis*	serv-*iez*
serv-*iant*	serv-*ent*

Preterite Indicative.	
serv-*i*(*vi*)	serv-*is*
serv-*i*(*vi*)*sti*	serv-*is*
serv-*i*(*vi*)*t*	serv-*it*
serv-*i*(*vi*)*mus*	serv-*îmes*
serv-*i*(*vi*)*stis*	serv-*îtes*
serv-*i*(*ve*)*runt*	serv-*irent*

Preterite Subjunctive.	
serv-*i*(*vi*)*ssem*	serv-*isse*
serv-*i*(*vi*(*sses*	serv-*isses*
serv-*i*(*vi*)*sset*	serv-*ît*
serv-*i*(*vi*)*ssemus*	serv-*issions*
serv-*i*(*vi*)*ssetis*	serv-*issiez*
serv-*i*(*vi*)*ssent*	serv-*issent*

Imperfect.	
serv-*iebam*	serv-*ais*
serv-*iebas*	serv-*ais*
serv-*iebat*	serv-*ait*
serv-*iebamus*	serv-*ions*
serv-*iebatis*	serv-*iez*
serv-*iebant*	serv-*aient*

Imperative.	
serv-*i*	ser-*s*

Present Participle.	
serv-*ient*(*em*)	serv-*ant*

Past Participle.	
serv-*it*(*us*)	serv-*i*

C. Third Conjugation. Defend-ere, *défend-re.*

Present Indicative.	
defend-*o*	défend-*s*
defend-*is*	défend-*s*
defend-*it*	défend- —[1]
defend-*imus*	défend-*ons*
defend-*itis*	défend-*ez*
defend-*unt*	défend-*ent*

Present Subjunctive.	
defend-*am*	défend-*e*
defend-*as*	défend-*es*
defend-*at*	défend-*e*
defend-*amus*	défend-*ions*
defend-*atis*	défend-*iez*
defend-*ant*	défend-*ent*

[1] The other Verbs of the third conjugation retain the original *t:* cred-it = croit ; rump-it = rompt ; deb-et = doit.

Preterite Definite.

defend-*i*	défend-*is*
defend-*isti*	défend-*is*
defend-*it*	défend-*it*
defend-*imus*	défend-*îmes*
defend-*istis*	défend-*îtes*
defend-*erunt*	défend-*irent*

Imperfect.

defend-*ebam*	défend-*ais*
defend-*ebas*	défend-*ais*
defend-*ebat*	défend-*ait*
defend-*ebamus*	défend-*ions*
defend-*ebatis*	défend-*iez*
defend-*ebant*	défend-*aient*

Preterite Definite Subjunctive.

defend-*issem*	défend-*isse*
defend-*isses*	défend-*isses*
defend-*isset*	défend-*ît*
defend-*issemus*	défend-*issions*
defend-*issetis*	défend-*issiez*
defend-*issent*	défend-*issent*

Imperative.

defend-*e*	défend-*s*

Present Participle.

defend-*ent(em)* défend-*ant*

Past Participle.

defend-*it(us)*[1] défend-*u*

V. Remarks on the Table of Terminations, and on the Formation of the Tenses generally.

299.—Verbs, in passing from Latin into French, weaken the unaccented vowels of the personal suffixes or reject them altogether: *am-ant*, *vend-unt* become *aim-ent*, *vend-ent*; *sent-ias* is changed into *sent-es*; *cant-amus* becomes in O. Fr. *chant-omes*, and then, after the rejection of the unaccented *e* in M. Fr., *chant-ons* instead of *chant-oms* as *m* before *s* is always changed into *n*.

A. Person-Endings.

300.—The 1st Person Sing. of the Present Indicative in O. Fr. terminated in the final vowel or consonant of the crude form: *j'aim*, *je pri*, *je vien*, *je croi*, *je voi*.[2]

[1] This is a supposed form for the classical form *defensus*: the French *défendu* has been formed from analogy to *vendu*, *connu* (venditus, cognitus).

[2] Forms like these were frequently used by the writers of the seventeenth century, and are so even now by poets.

The Lat. final *o* was replaced in M. Fr. by *e* in verbs of the 1st conj. (*j'aim-e*), whilst an inorganic *s* was added (1) to the 1st Person Sing.[1] of verbs of the other conjugations : *je ser-***s**,[2] *je vend-***s**, *je croi-***s**.

301.—Such an inorganic *s* was added—

(2) To the *Pres. Subj.* of *être* :—

Lat. *sim* (*siem*) ; O. Fr. *soi* ; M. Fr. *soi-***s**.

(3) To the *Imperfect* :—

Lat. *-abam* became *-ève*, *-oie*, *oi-***s**,[3] *ai-***s**.

(4) To the *Conditional* :—

Lat. *amare habeba***m** ; Fr. *aimerai***s** (see § 311).

(5) To the *Pret. Def.* :—

a. Of *être* and *avoir*.

b. Of the weak Verbs of the 2nd and 3rd conjugation.

c. Of all the strong Verbs.[4]

Lat. *fui*, *habui* ; Fr. *fu-***s**, *eu-***s** : Lat. *finivi*, *defendi* ; Fr. *fini-***s**, *défendi-***s** : Lat. *debui*, *vidi*, *bevui* ;[5] Fr. *du-***s**, *vi-***s**, *bu-***s** (O. Fr. *bui*).

(6) To the *Imperative* (2nd Pers. Sing.) of all Verbs.

Lat. *fin-***i**, *vend-***e**, *ten-***e** ; Fr. *fin-***is**, *vend-***s**, *tien-***s**.

[1] From analogy with the 2nd Pers. Sing. of the same tense or with the 1st Pers. Sing. of the Pret. of those Verbs in which the final *s* is organic (see § 321).—Instead of *s* we find *x* in *je fau-x* (O. Fr. *fal*), *je vau-x* (O. Fr. *val*), *je veu-x* (O. Fr. *vuel*), *je peux* (see § 296 (4))

[2] Verbs of the second conjugation whose crude form ends in *fr*, *vr*, *ll*, take *e* instead of *s* : *ou*vr*-ir*, *cou*vr*-ir*, *décou*vr*-ir*, *of*fr *ir*, *sou*ffr*-ir*, *sa*ll*-ir* = *j'ou*vr*-e*, *je cou*vr*-e*, &c.—*Bouill-ir* takes *s* : *je bou-***s**.

[3] Probably from analogy to the 2nd Pers. *-abas*, *-èves*, *-ois*, *-ais*.

[4] Except those Verbs mentioned in § 321, in all of which the *s* is organic, representing an original *s* (*x*) or *c* : *mis*, *fis* ; Lat. misi, feci.

[5] For the classical form *bibi*.

Exception. The *s* is not added to the *Imperative*:—

a. Of Verbs of the 1st conjug.: *aim-e, va.*

b. Of *cueillir, tressaillir, assaillir, offrir, couvrir, ouvrir, souffrir*: *ouvr-e, souffr-e*, &c.

c. Of *savoir* and *vouloir*: *sach-e, veuill-e.*

302.—The 2nd Pers. Sing. has *s* in all Verbs.

Exception. *tu peu-x, vau-x, veu-x, fau-x.*

303.—The original *t* of the 3rd Pers. Sing. is omitted:—

(1) After a mute *e*,[1] viz.:—

a. In the *Pres. Ind.* of Verbs in *er*:

il aim-*e* (*am-at*); il chant-e (*cant-at*).

b. In the *Pres. Ind.* of some Verbs in *ir*, viz.:

Il cueill-e, saill-e, tressaill-e, assaill-e;
Il couvr-e, ouvr-e, souffr-e, offr-e.

c. In the *Pres. Subj.* of all Verbs:

Qu'il aim-e, sent-e, vend-e (*am-et, sent-iat, vend-at*).

Except. *Soit* and *ait* keep the *t* (*sit, habeat*).

(2) After the vowel, *a*,[1] viz.:—

a. In the *Pret. Def.* of Verbs in *er*:

Il aim-a (*ama-vit*); chant-a (*canta-vit*).

Obs. The *t* has been retained in this tense till the fourteenth century.

[1] The *t* reappears before *il, elle, on* used as *subjects*: *Aime-t-il? Puisse-t-il avoir raison! Peut-être a-t-il eu tort. Chantera-t-on?*—According to their etymology, these forms ought, therefore, be written *aimet-il? Puisset-il? A-t-il?* &c.

b. In the *Future* of all Verbs :

Il donner-*a*, finir-a, vendr-a, devr-a.

c. In the Pres. Ind. of *avoir* and *aller :*

Il a, il va.

(3) After *t*, *d*, *c*, viz. :—

a. In *il sent, ment, se repent, part, sort, vêt, bat, met.*

b. In *il rend* and all other Verbs in *nd ;*
In *il perd* and all other Verbs in *rd ;*
In *sied, assied, coud, moud.*

c. In *il vainc.*

304.—As to the 1st Person Plur. Lat. *-mus*, became—

(1) *-Mes* in the Pret. Def. of all Verbs, and in the Pres. Ind. of *être : nous chant-âmes, finîmes, dûmes, sommes.*

(2) *-ns* in all the other tenses : *nous parlons.*

Thus *-amus* was changed into *-ons*, and from analogy to this form, the 1st Pers. Plur. of all the Verbs of the other conjugations also took this termination : sent-ons, fleuriss-ons, défend-ons (*sent-ĭmus, flor-esc-ĭmus, defend-ĭmus*).

305.—The termination of the 2nd Pers. Plur. *-tis* became—

(1) *-ts :* These two letters were, according to Old French orthography, generally represented by *z* (See § 278). Thus *am-atis* became *aim-ez*, and similarly *serv-ītis* and *vend-ĭtis* = *serv-ez, vend-ez* (See § 307).

(2) *-tes*, viz. :—

a. In *êtes, faites, dites.*

b. In the *Pret. Def.* of all Verbs : *chantâtes.*

The letters *s* or *c*, which in all these forms preceded the syllable *-tis* (*estis, fac(i)tis, dic(i)tis, cantastis*), pre-

vented throughout the contraction of *-tis* into *-ts*, and finally into *z*. (See § 278, Note).

306.—The 3rd Person Plur. whether it ends in *-ant*, *-unt*, *-ent*, becomes *-ent* in French: *am-ant*, *vend-unt*, *cant-ent* = *aim-ent*, *vend-ent*, *chant-ent*.

Exception. *Font*, *ont*, *vont*, *sont*.

B. Tenses.

307.—Present. *a.* Indicative.

From analogy to the 1st and 2nd Pers. Plur. of the Verbs of the 1st, 2nd, and 4th Latin Conjug., which always accentuate the last syllable but one (*amámus*, *amá-tis*; *delé-mus*, *delé-tis*; *audí-mus*, *audí-tis*), the Verbs of the 3rd weak Conjug. and all the strong Verbs have put the tonic accent on the last syllable but one in the 1st and 2nd Pers. Plur.[1]: *vendímus*, *venditis*, *credímus*, *creditis* (instead of *véndimus*, *vénditis*, &c.), which forms then became in French, *vendóns*, *vendéz*, *croyóns*, *croyéz*.

b. Subjunctive.

The 4th Lat. Conjugation has been the type for the formation of this Mood. The Lat. *a* became in French—

(1) *O* in the 1st Pers. Plur.

(2) *E* in all the other persons.

[1] There are only two exceptions to this rule: *faites* and *dites* (*redites*), which forms are regularly derived from Lat. *fácitis*, *dícitis* (cp. § 305).

Fourth Conjugation.

I.	II.	III.	I.	II.	III.
dorm	ia	m	que je dorm	e	—
dorm	ia	s	que tu dorm	e	s
dorm	ia	t	qu' il dorm	e	—
dorm	ia	mus	que n. dorm	io	ns[1]
dorm	ia	tis	que v. dorm	ie	z
dorm	ia	nt	qu' ils	e	nt

The Subjunctive of the other conjugations was formed from analogy to the 4th, viz. :—

Third Conjugation.

I.	II.	III.	I.	II.	III.
vend	a	m	vend	e	—
vend	a	s	vend	e	s
vend	a	t	vend	e	—
vend	a	mus	vend	io	ns
vend	a	tis	vend	ie	z
vend	a	nt	vend	e	nt

Second Conjugation.

I.	II.	III.	I.	II.	III.
ten	ea	m	tienn	e	—
ten	ea	s	tienn	e	s
ten	ea	t	tienn	e	—
ten	ea	mus	ten	io	ns
ten	ea	tis	ten	ie	z
ten	ea	nt	tienn	e	nt

First Conjugation.

I.	II.	III.	I.	II.	III.
am	e	m	aim	e	—
am	e	s	aim	e	s
am	e	t	aim	e	—
am	e	mus	aim	io	ns
am	e	tis	aim	ie	z
am	e	nt	aim	e	nt

[1] In O. Fr. there was still an *e*: *que nous dorm-ie-ns*

The Subjunct. of the present of *être* can only be explained by the Old Lat. form *siem*.

Latin.			*Old French.*			*Modern French.*		
I.	II.	III.	I.	II.	III.	I.	II.	III.
s	ie	m	s	oie	—	s	oi	s
s	ie	s	s	oie	s	s	oi	s
s	ie	t	s	oi	t	s	oi	t
s	ie	mus	s	oie	ns	s	oyo	ns
s	ie	tis	s	oie	z	s	oye	z
s	ie	nt	s	oie	nt	s	oie	nt

The Subjunctive of the Pret. Def. (or Imperfect) is derived from the contracted Lat. form in *-assem* (for *-avissem*) :—

Latin.			*Old French.*			*Modern French.*		
I.	II.	III.	I.	II.	III.	I.	II.	III.
amass	e	m	amass	e	—	aimass	e	—
amass	e	s	amass	e	s	aimass	e	s
amass	e	t	amas	—	t	aimâ	—	t
amass	e	mus	amass	ie	ns	aimass	io	ns
amass	e	tis	amass	ie	z	aimass	ie	z
amass	e	nt	amass	e	nt	aimass	e	nt

Similarly *que je fin-iss-e, vend-iss-e, par-uss-e,* &c.

308.—*Imperfect.* The Termination of the Imperfect *-abam* was gradually changed into *-eve, -oie,* and, with the inorganic *s* (see § 301), *-ois: am-abam, am-eve, am-oie, am-ois.* For this last termination Voltaire finally adopted (for the first time in *Zaïre,* 1732) that of *-ais* (*aim-ais*), which, it is true, had already been proposed by *Nicolas Bérain* in 1675, and taught by *Latouche* in his "*Art de bien parler Français,*" 1694.

Similarly *habebam* and *stabam* were in O. Fr. *avoie, estoie,* and have now become *avais, étais.*

309.—*Preterite Definite.* *a.* Probably from analogy with the 2nd Pers. Plur. (*faiſtes*, *chantaſtes*, Lat. *fuistis*, *cantastis*) or from a corruption of the *v* (*cantavimus*, *chantav'mes*, *chantaſmes*) an *s* was erroneously interpolated in O. Fr. in the 1st Pers. Plur. of the Pret. Def. of *être* and of all the other Verbs: *fuſmes*, *chantaſmes*, *dormiſmes*, *vendiſmes*. After the 17th century this *s* was no longer written, and its elision was marked by the circumflex: *fûmes*, *chantâmes*, *dormîmes*, *vendîmes*.

b. In some Verbs the 3rd Pers. Plur. of this tense, *e.g.* *vinrent*, *tinrent*, can only be explained by the fact that the Latin Perfects *venérunt*, *tenŭérunt*, came to be wrongly accented: the tonic accent was thrown back from the second to the first syllable; thus *ténuĕrunt*, *vénĕrunt*, have been the types of *vinrent* and *tinrent*.

310.—*Future.* The French Future *aimer-ai* is not derived from the classical Latin form *amabo*, but from *amare habeo*, a form which, especially in Low Latin, was used to express Futurity.

The Terminations *ai*, *as*, *a*, &c. (*habeo*, *habes*, *habet*), were at first separable from the Infinitive, but before long the two elements coalesced, so that they could no longer be distinguished.

311.—Similarly, the Conditional is formed from the Infinitive (*amare*) to which was added the Imperfect of *habeo*; thus *amare habebam* became *aimer-ais*, cf. § 308.

312.—Future of the Weak Verbs. Only the Verbs of the 3rd Conjug. call for a remark, viz. that the final *e* is regularly elided before the syllable *ai*: *défend-re*, *défend-re-ai*, *défend-r-ai* (see § 36, Note 1).

313.—Future of some of the Strong Verbs. Most Futures of Strong Verbs which in their derivation deviate

from the rule given in § 52, are to be explained partly by the different forms which their Infinitives had in O. Fr. partly by other reasons stated below.

Futures are formed by the addition of ai—

1. Directly from a Latin Infinitive :—

(1) All-er.	(2) Ĕt-re.
i-re	(es)se-re [1]
i-re-ai [2]	(es)se-re-ai [2]
i-r-ai	se-r-ai

2. Directly from an O. Fr. Infinitive :—

(1) Fai-re.	(2) Dev-oir.	(3) Recev-oir.	(4) Mouv-oir.
fe-re	dev-er	recev-er	mov-er
fe-re-ai [2]	dev-er-ai [3]	recev-er-ai [3]	mov-er-ai [3]
fe-r-ai	dev-r-ai	recev-r-ai	mov-r-ai [6]
			mouv-r-ai

3. After several phonetic changes from an O. Fr. Infinitive :—

a. (1) Pouv-oir.	(2) Choir.	(3) Seoir.	(4) Voir.
pod-er [4]	ched-er [7]	sed-er	ved-er
pod-er-ai [3]	ched-er-ai [3]	sed-er-a [3]	ved-er-ai [3]
pod-r-ai [5]	ched-r-ai [5]	sed-r-a [9]	ved-r-ai [5]
por-r-ai [6]	cher-r-ai [8]	sied-r-a [10]	ver-r-ai [11]
pour-r-ai		sié-r-a	

[1] See the Note to *naître*, § 318.
[2] For the elision of *e* before *ai*, see § 36, Note 1.
[3] The elision of the unaccented *e* is of frequent occurrence.
[4] Also *podir :* see § 323, note to *pouvoir*.
[5] The assimilation of *d* and *t* to *r* takes place frequently in the transition of Latin words into French : nu*t*rire = nou*rr*ir, pe*t*ra = pie*rr*e. Pu*t*rere, Low Lat. pu*t*rire, pu*d*rire ; O. Fr. po*d*rir, po*rr*ir ; M. Fr. pou*rr*ir.
[6] The change of *o* (Lat. unaccented *ŏ*) into *ou* is frequent enough : *cŏrona, lŏcare, mŏlinus* = cou*r*onne, lou*er*, mou*l*in.
[7] For *cader*, Lat. *cadĕre*, instead of *cadĕre*.
[8] Similarly *déchoir, échoir* = *décherrai, écherrai*.
[9] A diphthongation of the accented *e* into *ie* has taken place here as in *tenir, ten'rai, tendrai, tiendrai*.
[10] Whilst the *d* of *podrai, chedrai, vedrai*, is assimilated to the following *r*, the *d* of *siedra* is elided, and its elision is marked by the acute accent on the preceding *e*. The Fut. of *s'asseoir* is formed in the same way : *je m'assiérai*.
[11] *Pourvoir* and *prévoir*—two compounds of *voir*—form their Future from their M. Fr. Infinitive : *pourvoirai, prévoirai*.

(5) Cour-ir.	(6) Acquér-ir.	(7) Envoy-er.
cor-re	acquer-re	enve-er [4]
cor-re-ai [1]	acquer-re-ai [1]	enve-er-ai [5]
cor-r-ai [2]	acquer-r-ai [3]	enve-r-ai
cour-r-ai		enve-rr-ai [6]

b.

(8) Sav-oir.	(9) Av-oir.
sav-er	av-er
sav-er-ai [5]	av-er-ai [5]
sav-r-ai [7]	av-r-ai [7]
sau-r-ai	au-r-ai

c.

(10) Voul-oir.	(11) Val-oir.	(12) Fall-oir.
vol-eir	val-er	fal-ir
vol-eir-ai	val-er-ai	fal-ir-a [10]
vol-r-ai [8]	val-r-ai [8]	fal-r-a [8]
vol-dr-ai	val-dr-ai [9]	fal-dr-a [9]
vou-dr-ai	vau-dr-ai	fau-dr-a

4. From a Mod. Fr. Infinitive :—

(1) Ten-ir.	(2) Ven-ir.	(3) Mour-ir.
ten-ir-ai	ven-ir-ai	mour-ir-ai [9]
ten-r-ai [11]	ven-r-ai [12]	mour-r-ai
ten-dr-ai [11]	ven-dr-ai [12]	
tien-dr-ai	vien-dr-ai	

5. Altogether irregular is *cueill*-ir, which has cueill-er-ai.

[1] See Note 2 of the preceding page.
[2] See Note 6 of ditto.
[3] *Conquerrai, enquerrai,* have been similarly formed from *conquerre, enquerre.*
[4] A form of the Norman dialect.
[5] See Note 3 on the preceding page.
[6] *Renvoyer* forms its Future from analogy to *envoyer: renverrai.*
[7] *V* becomes often *u* before a consonant.
[8] Whenever *l-r* or *n-r* come to stand together, a *d* is intercalated in order to avoid this disagreeable collision of consonants: *molere, mol're, moldre, moudre; cinerem, cin'rem, cendre; tenir, tenirai, ten'rai, tendrai,* &c.
[9] Before a consonant, the *l* of *al* is changed into *u* (*alba* = *aube, palma* = *paume*).
[10] There is an elision of *i* here as in the case of *ven-ir-ai, ten-ir-ai, mour-ir-ai* (see above, No. 4).
[11] See Note 10 on preceding page.
[12] For the diphthongation of the accented *e*, see Note 9 of p. 11. In this manner, the Future of *tenir* could be distinguished from that of *tendre*, which is *tendrai.*

C. Additional Remarks.

314.—The root of the following Verbs (see §§ 40 and 41), *dorm-ir*, *ment-ir*, *part-ir*, *se repent-ir*, *sent-ir*, *serv-ir*, *sort-ir*, ends in two consonants, the last of which is rejected before *s* or *t* in order to prevent three consonants from following each other: *je dor-s*, *tu dor-s*, *il dor-t*, instead of *je dorm-s*, *tu dorm-s*, *il dorm-t*; *je ser-s*, *tu ser-s*, *il ser-t*, instead of *je serv-s*, *tu serv-s*, *il serv-t*, &c.

315.—In *battre* and *mettre* one *t* disappears before the flexional *s*: *je bat-s*, *tu bat-s*; as the root of these Verbs ends in a *t*, the flexional *t* of the 3rd Pers. Sing. is omitted (see § 303, No. 3).

316.—All Verbs with an interpolated *d* (*ceindre*, *ioindre*, *craindre* = *cingere*, *jungere*, *tremere*) throw out this *d* before *s* and *t*: *je cein-s*, *tu cein-s*, *il cein-t* (instead of *je ceind-s*, *tu ceind-s*, *il ceind-t*).

Obs. With these Verbs must not be confounded those in which *d* is radical in Latin (*vend-ere*, *tond-ere*); in such Verbs the *d* remains before the flexional *s*: *tu vend-s*.

317.—In the conjugation of a great number of Verbs, original Latin letters reappear: *moudre* (Lat. *molere*) has *moulons*, *moulez*, *moulant*, *moulais*, &c.; *coudre* for *cous-re*, from Lat *consuere*,* *consre*, has *cousons*, *cousant*, *cousais*, *cousis*, &c.; *croître* (Lat. *crescere*) has *croissons*, *croissant*, &c.; *résoudre* (Lat. *resolvere*) has *résolvons*, *résolvent*, and *écrire* (Lat. *scribere*) has *écrivons*, *écrivais*.

318.—In the first part of the Accidence, we have not very much departed from the ordinary way of classifying the *Strong* and the *Weak* Verbs, in order not to confuse the learner. In this part, it is necessary to add that, according to the principle of division laid

down in § 281, the following Verbs, of which a certain number are *Anomalous*, or in some of their tenses *Defective*, are all to be considered as weak, because they form the Preterite Def. by accenting the termination.[1]

A. To the first conjugation belong—

Aller,[2] *ester*,[3] *puer* (used only in the Infin., Fut., and Imperf.)

B. To the second conjugation belong—

Faillir, *issir*, *oüir*.[4]

C. To the third conjugation belong—

Coudre, *écrire*,[5] *naître*,[6] *suivre*, *vaincre*; *braire*, *bruire*, *frire*; and all Verbs in *aindre*, *eindre*, *oindre*, and *uire* (*craindre*, *conduire*).

[1] An *asterisk* has therefore been placed after each of them, in order to show that, strictly speaking, they ought to be placed among the *Weak* Verbs.

[2] *Aller* borrowed its various tenses from three different Verbs. (1) From *vadere* it forms the 3 Persons Sing. and the 3rd Pers. Plur.: *vado*, *vadis*, *vadit*, *vadunt* = *vais*, *vais*, *va*, *vont*. This form *vont* is derived from *vadunt*, in the same manner as *ont* is derived from *habent*:—

vad-*unt*	hab-*ent*
vad-*ent*	av-*ent*
va-*ent*	a-*ent*
vo-*nt*	o-*nt*

Compare the Germ. *han*, from *haben*. (2) From *ire*, the Fut. and Condit., by adding *ai* (see § 313): *j'irai*, *j'irais*. (3) From *aller*, all the other tenses. The etymology of *aller* seems to be: *ambulare*, *amblar*, *ambler*, *am'ler*, *aller*.

[3] *Ester* (Lat. *stare*) is now used in the Infinitive only, and as a term of law: *ester en jugrment*, to appear in court. It still remains in the compounds *rester* (*re-stare*), *arrêter* (*ad-re-stare*), *contraster* (*contra-stare*); and in *constant*, *distant*, *instant*, *nonobstant*.

[4] *Ouïr* is now used only in the Infinitive; formerly it was conjugated in all moods and tenses, e.g. *oi*, *os*, *ot*, *oons*, *oez*, *oent*, &c. La Fontaine still employed it: *Écoutez un bon mot, oyez une merveille.*

As another form for the Infinitive *oïr*, we still find *oyer*, which occurs in the English expression "a commission of *oyer* and *terminer*" = to hear and to determine.

[5] *Écrire*, from Lat. *scribere*, O.Fr. *escrire*, M.Fr. *écrire*. Forms like *écrivons*, *écrivais*, *écrivant*, seem irregular, but are etymologically quite correct, since the *v* represents the Latin *b*: *scribemus*, *scribebam*, *scribentem*. (See § 317.)

[6] *Naître* is not derived from *nasci*, but from *nascere* (see § 291), as *paître* from *pascere*, *suivre* from *sequere*, *être* from *essere* (see § 331).

For the Preterite *naquis*, see the remark on *vivre*, § 323, *B.*

VI. Strong Verbs.

319.—As the Preterite is the criterion for distinguishing whether a Verb is weak or strong, the Preterite also serves as a mode of dividing the Strong Verbs, whose Infinitives all end in *-ir*, *-re*, or *-oir*, into three classes.

320.—*First Class.* The first class form their Preterite by changing the radical vowel of the Verb into *i* :—

voir,[1] **vi(s)**, (*vidi*); tenir, **tin(s)**, (*tenui*);
venir, **vin(s)**, (*veni*).

Obs. The final *s* has been put in brackets in order to show that it is inorganic (see above, § 301, No. 5).

321.—*Second Class.* Verbs of this class form their Preterite in *is;* the final *s* represents in this case an original *s* or *c* in the Lat. Perfect :—

mettre, **mis**, (*mis-i*); faire, **fis**, (*fec-i*).

The following Verbs belong to this class :—

seoir[2]	(*sedere*)	con-quérir[3]	(*quærere*)
circoncire	(*circumcidere*)	prendre	(*prehendere*)
clore[4]	(*claudere*)	rire	(*ridere*)
dire	(*dicere*)	sourdre[5]	(*surgere*)
faire	(*facere*)	traire[6]	(*trahere*)
mettre	(*mittere*)		

[1] On the Fut. of *voir*, see § 313; on the Past Part. *vu*, see § 324. The Modern French forms of the Pret. *je vis*, *tu vis*, &c., no longer show the difference of accentuation in *vídi*, *vidísti* &c., which is still preserved in Old French *vídi* = *vi*, *vidísti* = *veis* (see § 294).
On *vídĕrunt* instead of *vidĕrunt*, see § 309, *b*.

[2] The simple Verb *seoir*, which is no longer in use except in the Participle *sis* and *séant* (*bien-séant*, *mal-séant*), has served to form several compounds: *asseoir* (ad-sedere), *rasseoir* (re-ad-sedere), *surseoir* (super-sedere). For the Future of *asseoir*, see § 313.

[3] For the Future of *conquérir*, *acquérir*, *enquérir*, see § 313.

[4] Clore has formed the compounds *éclore* (O. Fr. *esclore*, Lat. *ex-cludere*), *exclore*, *exclure*, *conclure*, *reclure* (Lat. *in-*, *ex-*, *con-*, *re-cludere*).

[5] *Sourdre* only survives in the Substantive *la source*, which, in O. Fr., was the Past Part. of this Verb.

[6] *Traire* had, in O. Fr., the same meaning as in Latin; it is now used only in the sense of *milking*.

322.—*Third Class.* The Verbs which belong to this class form their Preterite in *us*, and comprise all those Latin Verbs in *ĕre* which had *ui* in the Perfect: *debere, debui.* This form *debui* became in O. Fr. *dui*, in M. Fr. *dus* (*i* disappeared before the inorganic *s*; see § 301). In the same manner were formed *tacere, tacui*, O. Fr. *tui*, M. Fr. *tus; volere, volui*, O. Fr. *volui*, M. Fr. *voulus*, &c.

323.—The termination *us* was subsequently given to a great number of Verbs which did not form their Latin Perfect in *ui: bus* (*bibi*), *crûs* (*crevi*), *crus* (*credidi*). *courus* (*cucurri*). The following Verbs belong to the third class:—

A. In *ir:*

courir[1]	(*currere*)	gésir	(*jacere*)
mourir[2]	(*morire**)		

B. In *re:*

absoudre[3]	(*absolvere*)	croire	(*credere*)
boire	(*bibere*)	croître[4]	(*crescere*)
connaître	(*cognoscere*)	lire[5]	(*legere*)

[1] A certain number of Latin Strong Verbs in *ĕre* have produced Strong Infinitives in O. Fr., which, however, have become Weak in M. Fr. *Currere, frémere, imprimere*, are, in O. Fr., *courre, freindre, empreindre*; these Verbs are now accented on the termination instead of the root: *courir, frémir, imprimer*. Yet *courre* was often used as late as the eighteenth century (*aller courre fortune*); it still survives as a term of hunting: *courre le lièvre; laisser courre les chiens.*—For the Future of *courir*, see § 313.

[2] This Verb, a deponent in Latin, had already taken the active form in Low Latin: *morire*; thus *mourus*, from *morui* (instead of *mortuus sum*).

[3] Lat. *solvere* became *solvre, solre*; O. Fr. *soldre*, then *soudre.*

[4] Lat. *crescere* became gradually *crescre, cresre, crestre, croistre, croître*; the circumflex accent in the two first persons *je crois, tu crois*, serves only to distinguish these forms from *je crois, tu crois* (*credo, credis*); etymologically this accent is superfluous, as will be seen from the following table:—

Latin.			*Old French.*			*Modern French.*		
I.	II.	III.	I.	II.	III.	I.	II.	III.
cre	sco	—	croi	s	—	croi	s	—
cre	sci	s	croi	s	—	croi	s	—
cre	sci	t	croi	s	t	croî	—	t

[5] The *s* in *lisons*, &c., has probably been intercalated through the influence of the O. Germ. *lêsan.*

moudre [1]	(*molere*)	plaire	(*plăcĕre*) [2]
paître	(*pascĕre*) [2]	taire	(*tăcĕre*) [2]
paraître	(*parescĕre*) [2]	vivre [3]	(*vivere*)

C. In *oir:*

avoir	(*habere*)	mouvoir	(*movere*)
chaloir [4]	(*calere*)	pleuvoir	(**pluvĕre*)
concevoir	(*concipere*)	pouvoir [6]	(**potere*)
déchoir [5]	(*de-cadere*)	savoir [7]	(*sapĕre*)
devoir	(*debere*)	valoir	(*valere*)
falloir	(*fallere*)	vouloir	(*volere*)

324.—The Past Participle of all these Strong Verbs ends in—

(1) *u*, representing Participles in *itus*, *utus*; *cognitus* = *connu* (Verbs of the first and third class), *vu* = *vidutus* (for *visus*).

(2) *s*, representing Latin Participles in *s*; *missus* = *mis* (Verbs of the second class).

(3) *t*, representing Latin Participles in *ctus*; *dictus* = *dit*, *factus* = *fait* (Verbs of the second class).

[1] On the *l* in *moulons*, &c., see § 317.

[2] In Classical Latin *pasci*, *parĕre*, *tacĕre*, *placĕre*. This last form has produced the French Substantive *plaisir*.

[3] Lat. *x* = *ks* has, in several French words, been changed into *sk*. Thus *vixi* (i.e. *viksi*) has become *vesqui* in O. Fr. and *vécus* in M. Fr., and similarly *benedixi* has been changed into *benesqui*.

Upon this principle has also been formed the singularly anomalous Preterite of *naître*: *naquis* (O. Fr. *nasqui*, as it were from *nascui* or *nasquivi*, instead of *natus sum*).

[4] The only form of this Verb still in use is *il chaut*, e.g. *il ne m'en chaut*, it does not trouble me, it is no affair of mine; *peu m'en chant*, little care I!

[5] *Déchoir* and *échoir* are the compounds of *choir*, which is derived from *cadĕre* (for Class. Lat. *cădere*). Of the Simple Verb there were some forms in use even in the seventeenth century: the Pret. Def. *il chut* (il chut du ciel en terre, *Bossuet*), the Past Part. *chu*, and the Fut. *cherrai*, *cherras*, &c. See also § 313.

[6] *Potere* (Low Lat.) became in O. Fr. *poder*, *podir* (see the oath of the year 842, § 276), then *poir*, *pooir*, *povoir*, lastly in M. Fr. *pouvoir*.—For *pourrai*, see § 313.

[7] *Sapĕre* (for the Class. *sapĕre*) produced in O. Fr. *saver*; thence the Fut. *saurai*; see § 313.

VII. Auxiliary Verbs.

325.—It has already been said that the whole Passive and most of the Past Tenses of the Active are formed by the Auxiliary Verbs *avoir* and *être* (see §§ 290 and 294, *b*)—a method of conjugation which was principally developed through the analytic tendency of all the Romance languages, but which had its precedent not only in Popular, but even in Classical Latin: *De Cæsare satis dictum habeo* = *dixi* (Cicero).

326.—As to *habere*, it will be seen that the *h* has been dropped; this occurs in several other Latin words: **homo**, *on;* **hanc horam**, *encore.*

327.—The Past Participle *habitum* has gradually been changed into *avut, aüt, aü, eü, eu.*

328.—The *Future* is a compound of *aver* (O. Fr.) and *ai* (= *habere habeo*), which has gradually become *avrai, aurai* (see § 313).

329.—The Conditional is a compound of the Infinitive *aver* and *ais* (= *habere habebam*).

330.—*a.* On the final *s* in *j'avais, j'étais; je suis, je sois; j'eus, je fus*, see §§ 300 and 301.

b. On the final *t* in *ait* and *soit*, see § 303 (No. 1).

c. For the suppression of the *t* in *il a*, see § 303 (No. 2).

d. For the circumflex in *eûmes, fûmes*, see § 309 (*a*).

e. For the form *ont*, see § 318 (Note to *aller*).

331.—*Être*, from Lat. *essere* (instead of the classical form *esse*), *ess're, estre;* as *paître* is derived from *pascere, naître* from *nascere. Être* forms its tenses with the help of three Verbs: (1) *fui* gives *fus;* (2) *stare* produces *été* (*status*); (3) *esse* serves to form all the other tenses.

II.—ARTICLES.

332.—In French, as in all modern European languages, the want was felt of a mode of particularizing any common Noun, *i.e.* of individualizing and distinguishing it from other Nouns of the same class. To fill this office, no part of speech was better fitted than the demonstrative Pronoun *ille*, which already in Latin, and especially in Popular Latin, had frequently been used in the same way as we now employ the Article. *Ille*, gradually losing its demonstrative force, became in French the Def. Art. *le*, which only serves to particularize any common Noun. Yet a few traces of its original demonstrative meaning are still found in such phrases as—

pour *le* coup = *pour* cette *fois-ci*
de *la* sorte = *de* cette *sorte*
à *l'*instant même = *à* cet *instant même*
depuis *la* huitaine = *depuis* cette *huitaine*

333.—In O. Fr. there were still two cases of the Definite Article :—

	Masculine.		*Feminine.*	
	Subj. Case.	Obj. Case.	Subj. Case.	Obj. Case.
Sg.	il-le *li*	il-lum *le*	il-la *la*	il-lam *la*
Pl.	il-li *li*	il-los *les*	il-læ *li*	il-las *les*

334.—As the Subjective Case disappeared, there remained for the Masc. *le*, pl. *les*; for the Fem. *la*, pl. *les*.

335.—Combined with the Prepositions *de* and *à*, the Masculine Article in O. Fr. was—

del,	which has become in	Mod. Fr.	*du*[1]
al	,,	,,	Fr. *au*[1]
dels	,,	,,	Fr. *des*[2]
als	,,	,,	Fr. *aux*[1]

336.—The Latin Numeral *unus* became in O. Fr.—

	Subj. Case.		Obj. Case.	
Masc.	unus	*uns*	unum	*un*
Fem.	una	*une*	unam	*une*

After the rejection of the Subjective Case, there remained in M. Fr. *un*, Fem. *une*.

III.—NOUNS.

I. Preliminary Remark.

337.—It has been mentioned in the Introduction (§ 278) that, in the transition from Latin to French, the following changes took place :—

(1) *The Declensions disappeared.*

(2) *The Six Cases were reduced to one.*

[1] On the change of *l* into *u*, see *Introd.*, § 278.

[2] *Des* has been formed differently from *du, au, aux*, since the original *l* of *dels* (*de les*), contrary to the general rule, has not been changed into *u*; it has been elided. The same process of elision has also taken place in the old pronoun *es* (from *in illos, enls, els, es*), which still survives in some expressions; according to its etymology, it can be used only before words employed in the Plural: *bachelier-ès-lettres, bachelier-ès-sciences ; maître-ès-arts, Hombourg-ès-monts* (= on the mountains).

(3) *The Accusative was taken as the type of French Nouns;* the consequence of this was that

(4) *The plural of a Noun was marked by the addition of an* **s**, and that

(5) *Words in* **al** *regularly formed their plural in* **aux.**

II. Cases and Inflections.

338.—The following Nouns have, contrary to the law stated above (see § 337, No. 3), retained the Subjective Case :—

ancêtre	*antecessor*	fils	*filius*
peintre	*pictor*	fonds	*fundus*
traître	*traditor*	lacs	*laqueus*
legs	*legatus*	lis	*lilius* (for *lilium*)
sœur	*soror*	rets	*retis* (for *rete*)
lez	*latus*	puits	*puteus*
queux	*coquus*		

339.—A certain number of Latin words have produced two different words in French, the one formed from the Subjective, the other from the Objective Case :—

Subjective Case.		Objective Case.	
cántor	*chantre*	cantórem	*chanteur*
sénior	*sire*	seniórem	*seigneur*
májor	*maire*	majórem	*majeur*
pástor	*pâtre*	pastórem	*pasteur*
mínor	*moindre*	minórem	*mineur*

340.—In order to supply the want of Case-inflections, and to express the Genitive and Dative Cases, the French language chose the two Prepositions *de* and *à* (Lat. *de* and *ad*), which in Classical Latin had already been used for that purpose : *Themistocles noctu* de *servis*

suis (= *servorum*) *quem habuit fidelissimum ad regem misit* (Corn. Nepos).

341.—In O. Fr., an imitation or a reminiscence of the Latin case-ending is to be found in the frequent omission of *de* and *à*. Thus *mors regis* = *la mort* li *roi* (for *del*); *filius imperatoris* = *li fils* l'*empereor* (for *del*); *ne le dirai fame ne home* (= *à fame*, &c.).[1]

Even in M. Fr. there is still a trace of this omission of *de*, e.g. *de par le roi* (= de par *de* le [du] roi, *de parte regis*); *Hôtel-Dieu*, hospital; *bain-marie*, water-bath; *Fête-Dieu*, Corpus-christi day; *Faubourg St. Antoine*, &c.; and in many names of places: *Nogent le Roy*, *Bar le Duc*, *Château Thierry*.[2]

III. Gender of Nouns.

342.—*General Rule.* French Masculines and Feminines coincide with Latin Masculines and Feminines; the Latin Neuter Gender having disappeared, the greater part of Neuters become Masculines.

343.—For a certain number of changes from the *Masculine* to the *Feminine*, and *vice versâ*, and from the *Neuter* to the *Feminine*, it is most difficult to give a reason in every particular case. A definite principle has not yet been discovered. The Latin *termination* has certainly exercised a very great influence on the change of Latin Genders, as will be seen from the following remarks.

[1] The same thing has occurred in the English language, as may be seen from the translation of this very passage.

[2] In *Neuvy-lez-Bois*, *Plessis-lez-Tours*, *Passy-lez-Paris*, &c., *lez* is not the Plural of the Def. Art. *le*, but it is the Latin *latus* (compare with it *nasus* = *nez*, *casa* = *chez*, *ts* = *z*; see § 278, *c*, Note), which, in Low Latin, was used for *juxta* = *auprès de*, *près de*. It is wrong, therefore, to write in these names *les* instead of *lez* or *lèz*.

344.—(1) A few Latin *Feminines* of the Second and Fourth Declensions were *wrongly* taken as *Masculines* because they ended in *us*, and consequently took the Masculine Gender in French :—

a.	abyssus	*abîme*		domus	*dôme*
	porticus	*porche*		sapphirus	*saphir*
		portique		smaragdus	*émeraude*
	vannus	*van*		ficus	*figue*
	dialectus	*dialecte*		diametrus	*diamètre*
	atomus	*atome*		synodus	*synode*
	exodus	*exode*		pharus	*phare*

b. Names of Trees :—

alnus	*aune*	pinus	*pin*
buxus	*buis*	platanus	*platane*
cupressus	*cyprès*	myrtus	*myrte*
fraxinus	*frêne*		

345.—(2) *Neuter* Substantives were changed into *Feminines*, because their plural in *a* was mistaken for the singular of a *Feminine* Noun of the First Declension :—

animalia	*aumaille*	spolia	*dépouille*
arma	*arme*	tormenta	*tourmente*
cornua	*corne*	sponsalia	*épousailles*
gaudia	*joie*	pecora	*pécore*
idola	*idole*	festa	*fête*
opera	*œuvre*	fila	*file*
folia	*feuille*	grana	*graine*
labra	*lèvre*	insignia	*enseigne*
tempora	*tempe*	vela	*voile*
muralia	*muraille*	mirabilia	*merveille*
volatilia	*volaille*	paria	*paire*

346.—(3) Some Nouns seem to have changed their gender merely from analogy to synonymous words :—

Été Masc. (*ætas* Fem.) from analogy to *printemps*, *automne*, *hiver*; *sort* Masc. (*sors* Fem.) from analogy to *destin*; *salut* Masc. (*salus* Fem.) to *bonheur*.

347.—(4) As apparent exceptions, we may notice the following Nouns, which are derived not from *Classical*, but from *Low Latin* Substantives :—

délice	(Masc.),	from *delicium*,	not from	*delicia*
moulin	(Masc.)	,, *molinum*	,,	*molina*
fumée	(Fem.)	,, *fumata*	,,	*fumus*
ramée	(Fem.)	,, *ramata*	,,	*ramus*
colline	(Fem.)	,, *collina*	,,	*collis*

IV.—ADJECTIVES.

I. Formation of the Feminine.

348.—The neuter form of Latin Adjectives having disappeared, French Adjectives, as a general rule, have for their Feminine a separate form in *e*, when in Latin there are two terminations, one for the Masculine and one for the Feminine (*bon-us, bon-a* = *bon, bonne; plen-us, plen-a* = *plein, pleine*); but they have only one termination in French, when in Latin there is only one termination for both genders (*tristis* Masc. and Fem. = *triste; fidelis* Masc. and Fem. = *fidèle*).[1]

349.—This fact gives us the explanation of words like *grand'mère, grand'messe, grand'route* (see § 152, *B*), since *grand* (Lat. *grandis*, Masc. and Fem.) was still of both genders in O. Fr.; it was only in later times that an

[1] A great many of these Adjectives, it is true, are now of two terminations: *fortis* = *fort, forte; brevis* = *bref, brève; dulcis* = *doux, douce.*

apostrophe was wrongly added, because an *e* was supposed to have been thrown out.

350.—Another remnant of the old regular form of Adjectives of one termination is to be found in M. Fr.: *des lettres royaux;* the Lat. *regalis* (Masc. and Fem.) became in French *royal* (Masc. and Fem.), of which the Plur. was *royals, royaux.* (See § 278, *c*).

All Adjectives in *alis* have now taken two terminations: *talis* = *tel, telle; natalis* = *natal, natale.*

351.—The final stem-consonant of Latin Adjectives is generally altered or altogether dropped in the *Masculine* of French Adjectives, yet it reappears in the *Feminine;*[1] thus we are able to explain why the Feminine of—

A.	actif	is activ-e[2]	Lat.	*activ-us*
	neuf	,, neuv-e[2]	,,	*nov-us*
	glorieux	,, glorieus-e[2]	,,	*glorios-us*
	amoureux	,, amoureus-e[2]	,,	*amoros-us*
See § 187, No. 1.	doux	,, douc-e	,,	*dulc-is*
	préfix	,, préfix-e	,,	*præfix-us*
	roux	,, rouss-e	,,	*russ-us*
	brief	,, briev-e	,,	*brev-is*
	bref	,, brèv-e	,,	*brev-is*
B.	bas	,, bass-e	,,	*bass-us*
	épais	,, épaiss-e	,,	*spiss-us*
	gros	,, gross-e	,,	*gross-us*
See § 187, No. 3.	nul	,, null-e	,,	*null-us*
	ras	,, ras-e	,,	*ras-us*
	exprès	,, express-e	,,	*express-us*
	profès	,, profess-e	,,	*profess-us*
C.	beau	,, bell-e	,,	*bell-us*
See § 187, No. 6.	nouveau	,, nouvell-e	,,	*novell-us*
	fou	,, foll-e	,,	*foll-is*
	mou	,, moll-e	,,	*moll-is*

[1] Similar changes take place in the Provençal language: Masc. *bos*, Fem. *bona;* Masc. *jauzions*, Fem *jauzionda.*

[2] And all the other Adjectives in *f* and *x* change these letters into *ve* and *se* respectively.

D.

See § 187, No. 5.

coi	,, coi*t*-e	Lat. *quiet-us*
favori	,, favori*t*-e	,, *favorit-us*
bénin	,, bén*ign*-e	,, *benign-us*
malin	,, mal*ign*-e	,, *malign-us*
absous	,, absou*t*-e	,, *absolut-us*
dissous	,, dissou*t*-e	,, *dissolut-us*
tiers	,, tier*c*-e	,, *terti-us* O.Fr. *tiers-e*

Note. The only irregular Adjective of this class is *faux;* for there is no etymological reason for *faux* forming its Fem. *fausse*, since there is only one *s* in *fals-us*.

352.—As Lat. *c* or *cc* are regularly changed into *ch* in French (*campus* = *champ*, *planca** = *planche; bucca* = *bouche; vacca* = *vache*):—

See § 187, No. 2.

blan*c* becomes		blan*ch*-e	Lat. *blanc-us*
fran*c*	,,	fran*ch*-e	,, *franc-us**
se*c*	,,	sè*ch*-e	,, *sicc-us*
frai*s*	,,	frai*ch*-e	O.H. Germ. *frisc* Mod. Germ. *frisch*

Note 1. Many Adjectives change the *c* (and the *g*) into *qu* (or *gu*), in order to retain the guttural sound of these letters: *public, publique; long, longue* (see § 187, No. 2).

Note 2. *Grec* forms its Feminine quite irregularly *gre*cque.

353.—The influence of the *termination* on the root is seen—

A. In Adjectives ending in *t*. Two cases are to be distinguished.

a. Adjectives being formed by means of the *French* suffixes *et, ot*, double the final *t*:—

See § 187, No. 3.

mu-e*t*	mu-e*tte*	brun-e*t*	brun-e*tte*
bell-o*t*	bell-o*tte*	vieill-o*t*	vieill-o*tte*

b. Adjectives being directly derived from Latin—

aa. Double the *t*, if this letter has its origin in Lat. *ct* or *td* (*dt*):—

See § 187, No. 3.			
	sujet	sujette	Lat. *subjectus*
	net	nette	,, *nitidus*

bb. Simply add *e*, if there is only one *t* in the Latin original (Adjectives in *et* also take the grave accent on the *e*):—

See § 187, No. 3.			
	complet	complèt-e	Lat. *complet-us*
	concret	concrèt-e	,, *concret-us*
	discret	discrèt-e	,, *discret-us*
	inquiet	inquièt-e	,, *inquiet-us*
	replet	replèt-e	,, *replet-us*
	secret	secrèt-e	,, *secret-us*
	dévot	dévot-e	,, *devot-us*
	idiot	idiot-e	,, *idiot-us*

Note. *Prêt*, *prête*, has the circumflex accent on account of the elision of the *s* in *præstus*.

B. In Adjectives ending in *r* (see § 187, No. 4): premier, *premièr*e; amer, *amèr*e; fier, *fièr*e.

II. Formation of the Plural.

354.—There is some uncertainty in the use of the Plural of Adjectives in *al*, both among authors and grammarians, who show a great dislike to use the Plural of Adjectives, in which the *l*, against the general rule,[1] has not been vocalized: *fatals*, *finals*, *navals*.

355.—Many grammarians recommend avoiding these Adjectives altogether in the Plural, and using for them

[1] See *Introduction*, § 278.

synonymous words; for instance: *funestes* for *fatals*, *sobres* for *frugals*; or, to employ a periphrasis: *des conseils d'ami* for *des conseils amicals*, *des combats de mer* for *des combats navals*.

356.—The fact is that some of the best authors use these Adjectives both in *als* and *aux*.[1]

[1] It is amusing to hear *Boursault*, in his *Comédie sans titre* (Act IV. Sc. 6), on this class of Adjectives:—

La Rissole.

Lui mort (*i.e.* Ruyter), les Hollandais souffrirent bien des *mals!*
On fit couler à fond les deux *vice-amirals*.

Merlin.

Il faut dire des *maux*, *vice-amiraux*. C'est l'ordre.

La Rissole.

Les *vice-amiraux* donc ne pouvant plus nous mordre
Nos coups aux ennemis furent des coups *fataux*
Nous gagnâmes sur eux quatre combats *navaux*.

Merlin.

Il faut dire *fatals* et *navals*. C'est la règle.

La Rissole.

Les Hollandais réduits à du biscuit de seigle
Ayant connu qu'en nombre ils étaient *inégals*
Firent prendre la fuite aux vaisseaux *principals*.

Merlin.

Il faut dire *inégaux*, *principaux*. C'est le terme.

La Rissole.

Enfin, après cela nous fûmes à Palerme
Les bourgeois à l'envi nous firent des *régaux*
Les huit jours qu'on y fut, furent huit *carnavaux*.

Merlin.

Il faut dire *régals* et *carnavals*.

La Rissole.

Oh! dame,
M'interrompre à tous coups c'est me chiffoner l'âme
Franchement.

Merlin.

Parlez bien. On ne dit point *navaux*
Ni *fataux*, ni *régaux*, non plus que *carnavaux*
Vouloir parler ainsi, c'est faire une sottise.

III. Comparison.

357.—In Latin, the Comparative and Superlative of Adjectives were formed either by adding to the Positive the inflections *-ior*, *-ius*; *-issimus*, *a*, *um*, or by prefixing *magis* and *maxime*. This latter method of comparison was chosen by the French language; however, *plus* was adopted instead of the synonymous word *magis*, and *le plus* instead of *maxime*.

358.—The following Adjectives alone have retained the Latin synthetic form :—

La Rissole.

Eh ! mordié ! Comment donc voulez-vous que je dise ?
Si vous me reprenez lorsque je dis des *mals*
Inégals, *principals* et des *vice-amirals*,
Lorsqu'un moment après, pour mieux me faire entendre
Je dis *fataux*, *navaux*, devez-vous me reprendre ?
J'enrage de bon cœur quand je trouve un trigaud
Qui souffle tout ensemble et le froid et le chaud.

Merlin.

J'ai la raison pour moi que me fait vous reprendre,
Et je vais clairement vous le faire comprendre
Al est un singulier dont le pluriel fait *aux*.
On dit " C'est mon égal " et " Ce sont mes *égaux*."
C'est l'usage.

La Rissole.

L'usage. Hé bien ! soit. Je l'accepte.

Merlin.

Fatal, *naval*, *régal* sont des mots qu'on excepte
Pour peu qu'on ait de sens et d'érudition
On sait que chaque règle a son exception
Par conséquent on voit par cette raison seule.

La Rissole.

J'ai des démangeaisons de te casser la gueule,
Ces bras te deviendront ou *fatals* ou *fataux*.

Merlin.

Adieu, guerrier fameux par tes combats *navaux*.

	French.	Latin.
bon	meilleur	*meliorem*
mauvais	pire	*pejor*
grand	maire	*major*
petit	moindre	*minor*
(moult)	plusieurs	*pluriores*

359.—A few Superlatives in *issime* are still found which point back to the Lat. *issimus*, but all of which have broken the law of accent; *rarissimus*, *clarissimus*, ought to have produced *rarisme*, *clarisme* (and such they are found in O. Fr.), instead of *rarissime*, *clarissime*.

V.—PRONOUNS.

360.—French has, on the one hand, rejected several Latin Pronouns: *is*, *hic*, *alius*, *uter*, *ullus*, *quidam*, *nemo*, *omnis*; on the other hand, it has created some new ones: (1) by the composition of Pronouns with Pronouns (or with Particles); (2) by giving the force of Pronouns to a certain number of words which in Latin were either Substantives (*homo*, *rem*, *personam* = *on*, *rien*, *personne*), or Adverbs (*ibi*, *inde* = *y*, *en*).

I. Personal Pronouns.

361.—The subjoined table shows us the direct relation of Latin to French Pronouns. The forms in brackets are found in O. Fr. only:—

	1st Person.		2nd Person.		3rd Person.			
	Singular.							
N.	ego	*je*[1]	tu	*tu*	ille	*il*	illa	*la*
D.	mi	*me* (*m.vi*)[2]	tibi	*te* (*t.vi*)[2]	illi	*lui*	illæ	*lui* (*lei*)[4]
A.	me	*me* (*m.vi*)[3]	te	*te* (*t.vi*)[3]	illum	*le*	illam	*la*
	Plural.							
N.	nos	*nous*	vos	*vous*	illi	(*il*)[5]	illæ	*elles*[5]
A.	nos	*nous*	vos	*vous*	illos	(*ils*)	illas	(*elles*)

362.— II. Possessive Pronouns.

	Subjective Case.				Objective Case.			
	Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.	Masc.	Fem.
Sing.	meus	mea	*mes*	*ma*	meum	meam	*mon*	*ma*
	tuus	tua	*tes*	*ta*	tuum	tuam	*ton*	*ta*
	suus	sua	*ses*	*sa*	suum	suam	*son*	*sa*
Plur.	mei	meæ	*mei*	*mes*	meos	meas	*mes*	*mes*
	tui	tuæ	*tei*	*tes*	tuos	tuas	*tes*	*tes*
	sui	suæ	*sei*	*ses*	suos	suas	*ses*	*ses*

[1] *Ego* has become *eo* after the rejection of the *g* (as *magister, regina* have become *maltre, reine*), then *io, jo, je*.

[2] *I* is often changed into *oi*: *viam, voie; fidem, foi; video, vois*. Thus *mi* (for *mihi*) became first *moi* in O. Fr., then *me* in Mod. Fr.

[3] The Accusative Singular of the 1st and 2nd Person was in O. Fr. *me, te*, and *moi, toi*. In M. Fr. the former, together with *je* and *tu*, are used as *conjunctive*, the latter exclusively as *disjunctive* Pronouns: *moi qui prie*, which, in the first period of the language, was *je qui pri*. A reminiscence of this usage still survives in the phrase "*Je, soussigné, déclare que . . .*"

[4] It is only since the thirteenth century that the Dative *lui, to him*, has also taken the meaning of *to her* (*je lui donne* = *I give him* and *I give her*), which after sense *lei* used to express originally.

[5] The Nominative Plural of the 3rd Person was originally *il*, to which an *s* was added in the fourteenth century. The Nominative Plural of the Feminine appropriated to itself the form of the Accusative *illas* = *elles*.

The Accusative *illos* has given rise (1) to *les* (= il-*los*), which has become the Accusative of the Conj. Pers. Pron. *je* les *vois*; (2) to *eux* (= *ils, els*), which now is only used as the Disj. Pers. Pron.: *je viendrai avec eux*.

Rem. The Genitive Sing. *of him, of her*, is now *de lui, d'elle*, or sometimes *en, i.e.* Lat *inde*. There are many examples to show that the use of this *inde*, meaning *ex illo, ab illo*, in which sense it had already been employed by good Latin writers, became very common in Low Latin: *si potis* inde *manducare* = si tu peux *en* manger. During the first period of O. Fr., *inde* was *int* (see the oath of A.D. 842, § 276). This form was afterwards changed into *ent*, of which the *t* was finally dropped, and is still found in the word *sous-ent* (Lat. *sub-inde*).

As the Objective case was throughout taken as the typical form of Modern French Nouns and Pronouns, we get in this case *mon, ma, ton, ta,* &c.

363.—In M. Fr. the rule is that, when *ma, ta, sa* come to stand before a feminine Noun which begins with a Vowel or an *h* mute, they must be changed, for the sake of euphony, into *mon, ton, son* (*mon image*, fem.). This usage dates only from the fourteenth century. For in O. Fr. the *a* of *ma, ta, sa,* was regularly elided in such cases (just as *la âme* was changed into *l'âme*) and it was correct to say *m'image, m'espée.* In a few modern words we find a reminiscence of this old form of expression: *m'amour, m'amie.* As to this latter word, its etymology having been forgotten, it is now wrongly divided, and spelt *ma mie.*

364.—The Disjunct. Possess. Pron. is derived from the first syllable of *me-us, tu-us, su-us,* by the addition of the suffix *en.*

A.	Subjective Case.	Objective Case.
Sing.	*miens, tuens, suens*	*mien, tuen, suen*
Plur.	*mien, tuen, suen*	*miens, tuens, suens*
B.		
Sing.	*nostres, vostres*	*nostre, vostre*
Plur.	*nostre, vostre*	*nostres, vostres*

M. Fr. retained, with unimportant changes, the forms of the Object. Case to which the Defin. Article was prefixed: *le mien, le tien,* &c.

365.—If now, especially in familiar and facetious language, these Pronouns are used as conjunctive, *e.g. un mien ami* (= *un de mes amis*) *une mienne cousine* (= *une de mes cousines*), we find the explanation of this fact in

O. Fr. where they were used as such: *uns miens amis; le mien sanc.*

366.—*Leur*, Plur. *leurs*, is derived from *illorum;* formerly the Plural was written without *s*, according to its etymology: *illorum reges* = *leur rois; illorum reginæ* = *leur reines.*

III. Demonstrative Pronouns.

367.—These Pronouns have their origin in the Latin *ecce*, followed by *hoc*, *iste*, or *ille.*

1.	*Ecce hoc*	became in O. Fr.	*içe, ce*	M. Fr.	*ce*
2.	*ecce iste*	,,	*icist, cist*	,,	*cet*
3.	*ecce ista*	,,	*iceste*	,,	*cette*
4.	*ecce ille*	,,	*icil*, Acc. *icelui*[1]	,,	*celui*
5.	*ecce illa*	,,	*icele* ,, *icele*	,,	*celle*
6.	*ecce illos*	,,	*icil* ,, *icels*	,,	*ceux*
7.	*ecce illas*	,,	*iceles*	,,	*celles*

368.—From this table we see that *ecce* joined to *hoc* and *iste* has produced the *Conjunctive*, and joined to *ille* the *Disjunctive Demonst. Pron.*, which, as already often stated, took as their typical form the *Object. Case*, and rejected the *Subject. Case.*

IV. & V. Relative and Interrogative Pronouns.

369.—These two classes of Pronouns identical in form are, like the other Pronouns, directly derived from the Latin :—

[1] *Icelui, icelle, cettui (cestui)*, are still sometimes used in legal documents and in poetry written in imitation of Marot.

(1) From Lat. *qui* French *qui.*
(2) „ „ *quam* „ *que* and *quoi.*
(3) „ „ *qualis* „ *quel.*
(4) „ „ *de unde* „ *dont.*

370.—*Dont*, originally an Adverb = *d'où*, *whence*, has gradually taken the meaning of a Relative Pronoun: *whose.* In the former sense it was still used by the writers of the 18th century.

VI. Indefinite Pronouns.

371.—(1) *Aucun*, being derived from *aliquis unus*, had originally an affirmative meaning: *some, some one.* Of this meaning we still find many examples in *La Fontaine* or in colloquial language: *Aucuns le poursuivirent* (La Font.); *aucuns croiront que je suis amoureux* (Academ.). When preceded or followed by *ne*, it becomes the Negative Pron. *no one* (see § 384).

(2) *Autre*, L. *alter.*

(3) *Autrui* is, properly speaking, the Object. Case of *autre*, as *icelui* is that of *icil* (see § 367).

(4) *Certain*, Lat. *cert-us;* to the crude form was added the suffix *-anus: cert-anus, certain.*

(5) *Chacun*, Lat. *quisque unus*, O. Fr. *chasqu'un.*

(6) *Chaque*, Lat. *quisque*, O. Fr. *chesque, chasque.*

(7) *Maint*, Goth. *manags*, O. High Germ. *manac*, Mod. Germ. *manch.*

(8) *Même.* The contracted form of *semet ipsissimus* was *met ipsimus;* this latter served as the type for the O. Fr. word *medisme* and *meïsme*, which became in Mod. Fr. *mesme*, and finally *même* since the seventeenth century.

(9) *Nul*, Lat. *nullus*.

(10) *On*, from Lat. *homo* (not from *hominem*), O. Fr. *om*, *on*. In O. Fr. *om* or *on* was used both in the sense of an Indef. Pron. (*they*, *one*), and in that of a Substantive (*a man*; compare with it the Germ. Subst. *Der Mann*, and the Ind. Pron. *man*; Engl. *man* [*me*] and *one*). This fact explains why the Defin. Article may be used before it in Mod. Fr.: *l'on vient* (see § 236, No. 4).

(11) *Personne* (see § 384).

(12) *Plusieurs* is, as it were, a comparative of a comparative *plusiores*, *pluriores*, from *plus* (comp. the Germ. Comparat. *mehrere*, from *mehr*). *Plusiores*, having only one termination for the two genders, its French derivative, *plusieurs*, has only one termination for the Masc. and Fem. (*plusieurs hommes*; *plusieurs femmes*). Yet all other Adject. in *eur*, Lat. *or*, have taken two terminations: *majeur*, *majeure*; *mineur*, *mineure*.

(13) *Quantes*, which is derived from Lat. *quantus*, is in Mod. Fr. only met with in the familiar phrase *toutes et quantes fois*, or *toutes fois et quantes*, *e.g. je le ferai toutes fois et quantes il vous plaira*, I will do it as often as you like (*or* at any time you like).

(14) *Quelconque*, Lat. *qualiscunque*.

(15) *Quelque*, Lat. *qualisquam*.

(16) *Quelqu'un*, Lat. *qualisque unus*.

(17) *Quiconque*, Lat. *quicumque*.

(18) *Rien*, Lat. *rem* (see § 236, Nos. 5 and 8).

(19) *Tel*, Lat. *talis*.

(20) *Tout*, Lat. *totus*.

VI.—NUMERALS.

372.—1. *Cardinals.* The cases for the *Nom.* and the *Acc.* of the first three cardinal numbers were in O. Fr. :—

Subjective Case.		Objective Case.	
un-us	*un-s*	un-um	*un*
duo	*dui*	duos	*deux*
tres	*trei*	tres	*treis* (*trois*)

373.—As with the Nouns and the Adjectives, the *Subjective Case* was rejected here, and the *Objective Case* *un, deux, trois,* adopted in Mod. Fr.

374.—The numbers from 4 to 16 follow the Lat. numbers; 17, 18, and 19, are expressed by addition : *dix-sept* (transposition of the Latin *septemdecim*), *dix-huit*, *dix-neuf* (in Latin formed by subtraction : *duo-de-viginti*, *un-de-viginti*).

375.—The forms of the decades in Mod. Fr. will be better understood if we consider how they were contracted in O. Fr.

Latin.	Old French.	Mod. French.
viginti	veïnt	*vingt*
triginta	trëante	*trente*
quadraginta	quarëante	*quarante*
quinquaginta	cinquante	*cinquante*
sexaginta	sexante	*soixante*
septuaginta	setante	(*septante*)
octoginta	octante	(*octante*)
nonaginta	nonante	(*nonante*)

376.—The last three are replaced in Mod. Fr. by *soixante-dix*, *quatre-vingt*, and *quatre-vingt-dix*. Yet *septante* and *nonante* are still occasionally used in some parts of France, and especially in Belgium.

377.—The manner of counting by *scores* was much in use in O. Fr. *e.g.* *treis vinz* (3 × 20), *treis vinz et dis* (3 × 20 + 10), *quatre vinz* (4 × 20), *six-vinz* (6 × 20), &c. Of this there are still two remnants to be found in Mod. Fr. *quatre-vingt* (4 × 20), and *quinze-vingt* (15 × 20 = 300). The latter is used only in speaking of the *Hôpital des Quinze-Vingts*, founded by St. Louis in 1260 for the reception of 300 blind men; one of these is called "*un quinze-vingt.*"

378.—*Zéro*, *naught*, is derived from the Arabic *çifron*, *a cypher.*

2. *Ordinals.*

379.—The *first* and the *second* are formed directly from *primarius*, *secundus* = *premier*, *second.*

380.—All the other ordinal numbers (and also the *second*) are formed by the addition of *-ième* (Lat. *-esimus*) to the corresponding cardinal: *deux-ième*, *trois-ième*, &c.

381.—As remnants in Mod. Fr. of the first ten Latin Ordinals, we have to notice:—

(1) *Primus*, **prime-abord,** *at first sight, from the first moment;* **de prime-saut,** *all at once;* **prime-sautier,** *unpremeditated, impulsive.*

(2) *Secundus*, **second,** co-exists with *deuxième* (see § 252).

(3) *Tertius*, **le tiers état,** *the third estate* (French History); **le tiers parti,** *the third order;* **la fièvre tierce,** *tertian ague;* **parler en tierce personne,**

to speak in the third person; **le tiers ordre de St. François,** and a few similar expressions.

(4) *Quartus*—**Fièvre quarte,** *quartan ague. Quart* is often found in the writers of the seventeenth century: *Un quart voleur survint* (La Fontaine).

(5) *Quintus*—**Charles Quint** (to distinguish Charles the Fifth, *Emperor of Germany,* from any other Charles the Fifth); **Sixte-Quint,** *Pope Sixtus the Fifth;* **quinte-feuille,** *cinq-foil;* **quinte,** *quint* (cards); **quinte,** *the fifth* (music); **quinte de toux,** *fit of coughing.*

(6) *Sextus*—**sixte,** *sixth* (music).

(7), (8) *Septimus* and *octavus* (in O. Fr. *setme* and *octave*), have disappeared. The word *octave* (music) is derived from the *Italian.*

(9) *Nonus*—**la none,** *the 9th hour* of the day.

(10) *Decimus*—**la dîme,** *the tithe.*

VII. ADVERBS.

382.—French Adverbs may be divided into—

A. Simple, i.e. formed without any special suffix.

B. Derived, i.e. formed from Adjectives by means of a suffix.

C. Compound, i.e. formed from two or more words.

383.—*A.* There is only a small number of simple Adverbs derived from Latin :—

Ailleurs	from	*aliorsum*	peu	from	*paucum*
bien	,,	*bene*	pis	,,	*pejus*
certes[1]	,,	*certe*	plus	,,	*plus*
donc	,,	*tunc*	puis[4]	,,	*post*
en	,,	*inde*	quand	,,	*quando*
fois[2]	,,	*vices*	si	,,	*sic*
guères[3]	,,	*little, hardly*	soudain[5]	,,	*subitaneus*
hier	,,	*heri*	souvent	,,	*subinde*
là	,,	*illac*	tant	,,	*tantum*
loin	,,	*longe*	tard	,,	*tarde*
mal	,,	*male*	tôt	,,	*tostus* (or, according to *Diez*, from *tot cito*)
mieux	,,	*melius*			
moins	,,	*minus*			
ne	,,	*non*	très	,,	*trans*
non	,,	*non*	trop	,,	*troppus*
or	,,	*hora*	volontiers	,,	*voluntarie*
où	,,	*ubi*	y[1]	,,	*ibi*

384.—To these we must add the six Adverbial phrases which express negation in French: *pas* (*passum*), *point* (*punctum*), *mie* (*micam*), *goutte* (*guttam*), *personne* (*personam*), *rien* (*rem*).

At first all these words were no negatives, because, by themselves, they did not deny anything. Originally they expressed *a small quantity* and thus made the force of the negative *ne* so much the more felt,[6] *e.g. il ne bouge pas*, he does not move a step; *il ne voit personne, rien, point*, he does not see a person, a thing, a point (a bit); *il ne mange mie*, he does not eat a bit; *je ne bois goutte*, I do not drink a drop. They all changed their first

[1] *Certes* is an exemplification of the curious fact that to a great many Adverbs which are without a final *s* in Latin, this letter has been added, because, as M. Littré says: "they were originally regarded as Adjectives in the Objective Case Plural;" compare the Italian Plural form of Adverbs: *volontieri, lungi, tardi*, &c.

[2] *Vices* became in O. Fr. *vets, fes, feis*. *Fois* serves also to form compound words by being added to *par-, toute-, quelque-, autre-*, &c.

[3] On *guères*, see *naguère*, § 386.

[4] On *puis*, see § 296, Note to *puisse*.

[5] *Subitaneus* became in Provençal *sobtan*, in O. Fr. *soubdain*.

[6] Compare the Latin negatives, *nihil* = *ne hilum*; *nemo* = *ne homo*. The English *naught* = *ne aught*; the German *nicht* = *ne wicht*.

affirmative meaning to a negative one after having long been used with *ne* to form negative expressions.

Mie, as negation, has become obsolete; *goutte* can now be used only with the two Verbs *entendre* and *voir*: *je ne vois goutte, il n'entend goutte.*

385.—*B.* Instead of the suffixes *-e, -ter*, by which Latin Adverbs were derived from Adjectives (*doct-e, vehement-er*), the French language chose for this purpose the suffix *-ment*, which is drawn directly from the Substantive *mens*. This Noun had come to mean *fashion, manner*, and had in Latin already served to form Adverbs; as it was of the feminine gender, the feminine form of the Adjective was added to it: *bona mente, devota mente fecit.*[1] These Ablatives, then, are the types of the French Adverbs in *ment: bonnement, dévotement.*

386.—*C.*

Ainsi	*æque sic* (Diez) *in sic* (Littré)	aujourd'hui[3]	*au jour d'hui* (O.Fr.)
alentour	*à l'en-tour*	auparavant	*au par avant*
alors	*à l'ore* (O. Fr.)	aussi[4]	*aliud sic*
amont[2]	*ad montem*	autant[5]	*aliud tantum*
à présent	*ad præsentem*	aval[6]	*ad vallem*
assez	*ad satis*	beaucoup[7]	*colpus*
		ça	*ecce hac*

[1] Compare the English: *likewise, otherwise*, &c.; the German: *thörichter Weise*; *nothwendiger Weise.*

[2] **Amont** = *up the river*, had for its opposite **aval** = *down the river*, and the Verb *avaler* originally meant *to descend* (*un bateau qui avale le fleure*), and then gave rise to the derived meaning *to swallow.* Thus one says: *pays d'amont* = high country, or, country situated near the source of a river; *amont de la ville* = above the town.

[3] The O. Fr. form is more true to the origin of this word, of which the last part is the Latin *hodie*, to-day; *aujourd'hui*, therefore, properly means *on the day of to-day.*

[4] *Aliud sic* first became *alsi* in O. Fr. (On the change of *l* into *u*, see § 278, *c.*)

[5] *Aliud tantum* was in O. Fr. *altant.* Compound Adverbs of *tant* are *partant* (*per tantum*), *pourtant* (*pro tantum*).

[6] See the remark on *amont.*

[7] *Colaphus, colphus, colpus*, a blow, finally produced in French *coup*, which word, being added to *grand* or *beau*, was first used in the sense of *a fine, a happy*

céans	*ecce hac intus*
combien	*comme* and *bien*
comment	*comme* and *ment*
davantage	*d'avantage*
dedans	*de* and *dans*
dehors	*de* and *foras*
déjà	*de jam*
demain	*de* and *mane*
depuis	*de* and *post*
désormais [1]	*des ore mais**
dessous	*de* and *subtus*
dessus	*de* and *susum*
dont	*de* and *unde*
dorénavant [2]	*de hora in ab ante*
encore	*hanc horam*
enfin	*en* and *fin**
ensemble	*insimul* / *ensemle* (O. Fr.)
environ [3]	*en viron*
ici	*ecce hic*
jadis [4]	*jam diu*
jamais [5]	*jam magis*
longtemps	*longum tempus*
lors [6]	*l'ore**
maintenant	*manu tenente*
naguère [7]	*weiger* (Germ.)
oui [8]	*hoc illud*
partout	*per totum*
presque	*près* and *que*
tandis [9]	*tam diu*
toujours	*tous jours**

blow or *stroke;* afterwards it took the meaning of *much, a great deal,* and gradually replaced the old form **moult** = *multum.*

[1] The O. Fr. form shows more clearly than the modern spelling, the meaning of this word: *dès* = *de ipsa; ore* = hora; *mais* = magis: thence *désormais* means *from this hour forwards, i.e. from this very, from this present hour;* the same meaning is attached to *dorénavant* = *de hora in ab ante.*

[2] On the meaning of *dorénavant,* see Note 8.

[3] *Viron* was in O. Fr. a Substantive, meaning *a circle,* derived from the Verb *virer* (to veer, to turn round); *environ,* therefore, means *that which is in a circle, that which is near.* With the same Verb must be connected the Noun *aviron* = *oar,* i.e. *that which makes a circle, that which turns round.*

[4] On the final *s* in *jadis,* see *certes.*

[5] *Jam* became *ja* = *from this moment,* and *magis,* was changed into *mais* = *more;* thence *ne ... jamais* = *not from this moment more* or *again,* i.e. *never.*

[6] To *ore* (Lat. *hora*) an inorganic *s* was added as in other Adverbs (see *certes*), and the Def. Art. prefixed.

[7] As Germ. *w* is regularly changed into *gu* in French (warten = *garder*, warnian = *garnir*); *weigero* (O.H.Germ.) became in Provençal *gaigre,* in O.Fr. *guère,* and originally meant *much:* il ne m'aime *guère* = il ne m'aime pas *beaucoup;* je l'ai vu n'a guère = *I have seen him not much* (*not a long time*) *ago;* thence in Mod.Fr. *n'a guère,* written in one word, means *lately.*

[8] *Hoc illud* became in O.Fr. *oïl,* as non *illud* became *nenil,* the Mod.Fr. *nenni.*

[9] *Tandis,* according to its etymology, was used in the sense of *during this time* till the eighteenth century; for example:—

> " *Et tandis, il m'envoie*
> *Faire office vers vous de douleur et de joie.*"
> CORNEILLE (*Hor.* iv. 2).
>
> " *Tandis j'acheveray le voyage entrepris.*"
> HARDY (*Alceste*).

VIII.—PREPOSITIONS.

387.—French Prepositions are formed in different ways. They are—

(1) *Original Latin Prepositions:*—

À	*ad*	par	*per*
contre	*contra*	pour	*pro*
en	*in*	sans	*sine*
entre	*inter*	sur	*super*
outre	*ultra*	vers	*versus*

(2) *Compounds of Latin Prepositions:*—

Avant	*ab ante*	devers	*de versus*
devant	*de ab ante*	envers	*in versus*

(3) *Compounds of Prepositions, with Adverbs, Adjectives, and Pronouns:*—

Après	*ad pressum*	dès	*de ipso*
avec	*apud hoc*	dessous	*de subtus*
dans[1]	*de intus*	dessus	*de susum*
deça	*de ecce hac*	parmi	*per medium*
de là	*de illac*	selon	*sublongum*
derrière	*de retro*	à travers	*ad transversum*

(4) *Real Participles:*—

Durant,[2] *pendant, joignant, moyennant, non-obstant,* &c.

[1] *Intus* became *ens*, before which the Preposition *de* was placed: *dens*, then *dans*.

[2] Compare the English *during, pending, notwithstanding*..

(5) *Derivatives from Nouns :—*

Chez from *casa*. The Latin phrase in casa, *in the house of*, became in O. Fr. *en chez* (It. *in casa*, Sp. *en cas*), of which the *chez* alone has remained in Mod. Fr. This explains the expressions : *il demeure près de chez nous ; il vient de chez son tailleur.*

Faute from the Substantive *faute*, It. *falta*.

Malgré from *malum gratum*, bad will.

(6) *Derivatives from Adjectives, Verbs, and Adverbs :—*

Hors (*foras*, O. Fr. *fors*) ; *hormis* (*foras missum*) ; *lez* (*latus*[1]) ; *rez*[2] (*rasus*) ; *voici*, *voilà*.[3]

(7) *Substantives formed of the Article followed by a Preposition :—*

Au-dedans, *au dehors*, *au delà*, *au dessous*, *au dessus*, *au devant*, *auprès*, *au travers*.

(8) *Substantives formed of a Substantive or an Adjective preceded by the Article :—*

Au lieu, *au milieu*, *au bas*, *le long*, *du haut*, *au moyen*, &c.

[1] On *latus*, see § 341, Note.

[2] *Rez* in O. Fr. meant *smooth shorn*, and *à rez de terre* was on the *smooth shorn level* of the ground ; thence the modern expression *rez-de-chaussée*, i.e. *that part of the house which is on a level with the road, the ground floor.*

[3] The Adverbs *ici* and *là* were joined to the Imperative of *voir*, from which they could formerly be separated : *voi me là.*

IX.—CONJUNCTIONS.

388.—They may be considered under the following heads :—

A. As Simple Conjunctions having the same meaning as in Latin :—

Et	*et*	comme	*quomodo*
ni	*nec*	si	*si*
ou	*aut*	que	*quod, quam*
quand	*quando*		

B. As Simple Conjunctions with a meaning different from their Lat. original :—

car	*quare*, with the meaning of		*nam*
donc	*tunc*	,, ,,	*igitur*
mais[1]	*magis*	,, ,,	*autem* and *sed*
or	*hora*	,, ,,	*nunc*

C. As Compound Conjunctions :—

quoique	*quidquam*, instead of		*quamquam*
tandisque	*tam diu*	,,	*dum*
puisque	*postquam*	,,	*quoniam*
aussi	*aliud sic*	,,	*quoque*
plutôt	*plus tôt* *	,,	*potius*
tant que	*tantum quod*	,,	*donec, dum*
pour que	*pro quod*	,,	*ut*
néanmoins	*néant* and *moins* *		
lorsque alorsque	*ad illam horam quod*		

[1] The original meaning of *mais* = *plus* is preserved in *désormais* (see § 386), and in the expression *Je n'en puis mais* = *Je n'en puis pas davantage.*

sans que	*sine quod*
parceque	*per ecce quod*
après que	*ad pressum quod*
cependant	*ce* and *pendant*, i.e. *while this is pending, lasting.*

389.—There are some more Conjunctions as: *sitôt*, *toutefois*, &c. the composition of which is so clear that they require no further explanation.

X.—INTERJECTIONS.

390.—Only a few Interjections call for a special remark.

Hélas. In O. Fr. the first part of this word, *hé*, was an Interjection, the second an Adjective, *las*, fem. *lasse* (from Lat. *lassus*, *laxus*) unhappy: *Hé las* (or *lasse*) *que je suis* = *Unhappy one that I am!* It is only in Mod. Fr. that the two words were joined to form the Interjection *hélas*, alas.

Dame. The Latin *Domine Deus* was contracted into *Domne Deus*, and then became in O. Fr. *Dame-Dieu.* Being, originally, a compound Substantive it came to be used as an Interjection, after the second word had disappeared. The feminine *domina* has given rise to the same form *dame*, which we find in the expression: *Notre-Dame, la Sainte Vierge.*

Morbleu, *parbleu.* It is through a desire to avoid the name of *God* that the forms *morbleu* (O. Fr. *morbieu*) and *parbleu* (O. Fr. *parbieu*), are employed for *mort* (*de*) *Dieu* and *par Dieu.*

INDEX.

*** *The Numbers do not refer to Pages, but to Sections.*

A.

A, pronunciation of, 12 *sq.*
abréger, 59
absoudre, 117 (note 1). 127, 141, 323 (*B*)
absous, 187 (5)
abstraire, 111
Accent, 6, 295
accroître, 122
acheter, 54, 57
acquerrai, 96, 313
acquérir, 113
acteur, 187 (7)
Adjectives, 186, 348
  formation of plural, 188, 348
  formation of feminine, 186. 187, 354
  used as adverbs, 265
  derived from names of nations and sects, 20 (3)
  comparison of, 190
Adverbs, 382
  place of, 257
  formation of, 258
  of quantity, 260
  of place, 261
  of time, 262
  of manner and quality, 263
  of affirmation and negation, 264
  comparison of, 192, 259
aïeul, 170 (5)
aide, 183
aigle, 182 (1)
aigre-doux, 189 (3)
ail, 170 (5)
ailleurs, 383
ainsi, 386
ait, 303 (1)
all, 238 (9)
alentour 386
aller, 97, 318 (*a*)
  s'en aller, 98
amont, 386
Alphabet, 1
ambassadeur, 187 (8)
amical, 189 (2)
amour, 182 (3)
l'an, 247
âne, 185
any, 236 (2), 237 (3)
anybody, 236 (2)
anyone, 236 (5)
anything, 236 (5)
any whatever, 237 (3)
apercevoir, 136 (note)
apparoir, 144
appeler, 53, 296, (2, note)
Apostrophe, 7
après, 387
après que, 388
après-midi, 172 (*D*, note 3)
aquilin, 187 (10)
arrière-ban, 172 (*D*, note 3)
Articles, 158, 322
Articles, definitive, 159, 333
  indefinite, 164, 336
  partitive, 165
as...as, 193 (*d*)
assaillir, 44, 287, 301 (6), 303 (1)
s'asseoir, 114, 313, (3, *a*)
asservir, 41 (note)
assez, 386
assidûment, 258 (1)
assied, 303 (note 3)
assiérai, 313 (3, note)
attraire, 111
au (= à le), 101, 335
aux (= à les), 162, 335
aucun, 236 (5, 6), 238 (1), 371
aujourd'hui, 386
aune, 183
auparavant, 386
aurai, 313 (3)
aussi, 388
austral, 189 (2)
auteur, 187 (8)
automne, 182 (3)
autre, 238 (6), 371
autrui, 236 (6), 371
Auxiliary verbs, 325; see *Verbs*
aval, 170 (2)
avant, 387
avec, 387
aveuglément, 258 (1)
avoir, 30, 323 (*c*), 3.6

B.

B, pronunciation of, 16
bail, 170 (3)
bailleur, 187 (7)
bailli, 185
bain-marie, 172 (*A*)
bal, 170 (2)
bancal, 189 (2)
baron, 185
bas, 351 (*B*)
bat, 303 (3)
battre, 69, 315
beau, 187 (6), 351 (*C*)
beaucoup, 192, 384
bellement, 258 (1)
bénéficial, 189 (2, note)
bénin, 187 (5), 351 (*D*)
bénir, 66, 286
bien, 167, 192, 383
bienfaiteur, 187 (7)
billion, 246
bijou, 170 (1)
blanc, 187 (2), 352
blanc-seing, 172 (*B*, 1)
bleu, 189 (1)
bocal, 170 (2)
boire, 118, 296 (7), 323 (*B*)
bon, comparison of, 191
bon sens, 168
boréal, 189 (2)
both, 238 (8)
bouillir, 46, 287
bourreler, 54
braire, 145, 318 (*C*)
bref, brief, 187 (1)
bruire, 146, 318 (*C*)

C.

C, pronunciation of, 16, 19
ça, 384
caillou, 170 (1)
cagot, 187 (3)
cal, 170 (2)
canard, 185
canonial, 189 (2)
Capital letters, use of, 20
car, 388
caracal, 172 (2)
Cardinal numbers, 239
,, ,, instead of the ordinals, 253
carnaval, 170 (2)
Cases of nouns, 278 (*a*), 338
ce = this, 210, 367
ce = it, 215
céans, 384
Cedilla, 9
c'est moi, 202 (3)
ceindre, 103, 318 (*c*)
celer, 54
celles, 367
celui, 367
cent, 241, 242
cent-suisse, 172 (*B*, note 1)
cependant, 388
certain, 237 (5), 371
certes, 383
ceux, 367
ch, pronunciation of, 16
chacal, 170 (2)
chacun, 236 (1), 371
chaloir, 323 (*C*)
chanoine, 185
chanteur, 187 (9)
chaque, 237 (1), 371
chasseur, 187 (9)
chat, 185
châtain, 187 (10)
chaut, 323 (*C*, note)
cherrai, 313 (3), 323 (*C*, note)
cheveau-léger, 172 (*C*)
chez, 387
choir, 147
chose, gender of, 182 (4)
chou, 170 (1)
chrétien, 185
ciel, plural of, 170 (5)
circoncire, 321
clair-semé, 189 (3)
clore, 148, 321
coi, 187 (5), 351 (*D*)
colin-maillard, 172 (*A*)
Collective numbers, 254
collégial, 189 (2, note)
colleter, 54
colossal, 189 (2)
combien, 384
,, different from *que de*, 260 (3)
comment, 384
commodément 258 (1)
communément, 258 (2)
compagnon 185
comparison, 190—104, 357
complet, 187 (3), 353
comte, 185
concevoir, 136 (note), 323 (*C*)
conclure, 119
concret, 187 (3), 353
Conditional, 311
conduire, 100
confire, 101
conformément, 258 (1)
confusément, 258 (1)
Conjugations, the three weak—
1st conj., 38
2nd conj., 39
3rd conj., 48
Conjunctions—
coordinative, 271
subordinative, 272
connaître, 120, 323 (*B*)
conquérir, 321
Consonants, division of, 5
,, pronun. of, 16
construire, 100
continûment, 258 (1)
contravenir, 86
contre, 387
contredire, 104
contre-jour, 172 (*D*, note 3)
convenir, 87, 94, 116
coq-à-l'âne, plural of, 172 (*C*)
corail, 170 (3)
cornette, 183
coud, 303 (3)
coudre, 102, 317, 318 (*C*)
courir, 130, 323 (*A*)
courrai, 96, 313 (3, *a*)
court-vêtu, 189 (3)
couvrir, 43, 287, 301 (6), 303 (1)
crasse, 187 (10)
créateur, 187 (7)
crêpe, 183
crocheter, 54
craindre, 103
croire, 121, 323 (*B*)
croissons, 317
croître, 122, 317, 323 (*B*)
crû, 187 (*b*)
crucial, 189 (2, note)
crûment, 258 (1)
ct, pronunciation of, 16
cueillir, 45, 287, 301 (*b*), 303 (1)
cuir, 19 (note)
cuir, 100
cursive, 187 (10)
czar, 185

D.

D, pronunc. of, 16, 19
dame, 390
dans, 386, 387
davantage, 386
Days of the week, 80
débiteur, 187 (7)
deçà, 387
décevoir, 149

décherrai, 96, 313 (3)
déchoir, 131, 323 (*C*)
décroître, 122
défendeur, 187 (7)
dégeler, 54
dehors, 386
déjà, 386
delà, 387
délice, 182 (2)
demain, 386
demandeur, 187 (7)
demeurer, 90
demi, 255 (*Obs.* 2)
demi-Dieu, 172 (note 1)
demi-mort, 189 (3)
Dentals, 5
dépaqueter, 54
depuis, 386
Derivation, see *Tenses*
derrière, 387
des (= de les), 161, 335
dès, 387
désormais, 386
dessous, 386, 387
dessus, 386, 387
detruire, 100
deuxième, 252
devant, 387
devérs, 387
devin, 185
devineur, 185
devoir, 132, 296 (3), 323 (*C*)
dévot, 187 (3), 353
devrai, 96, 313 (2)
Diæresis, 8
diagonal, 189 (2, note)
diamétral, 189 (2, note)
Dieu, 185
différent, 237 (*b*)
diffusément, 258 (2)
dime, 381 (9)
dindon, 185
dire, 104, 321
discret, 187 (3), 353
dispos, 187 (10)
dissoudre, 127 (1), 141
dissous, 187 (5), 351 (*D*)
distraire, 111
dites, 305 (2), 307 (note)
divers, 237 (6)
Division of words into syllables, 17
docteur, 187 (8)
doctoral, 189 (2)
doge, 185
donc, 383
dont, 230, 235, 386
dorénavant, 386
dormir, 41, 287, 314
doucement, 258 (2)
doux, 187 (1), 351
druide, 185
dû, 187 (6)
du (= de le), 161, 335
duc, 185
ducal, 189 (2)
dûment, 258 (1)

E.

E, elision of, 7
e, pronunciation of, 12
each, 236 (1)
each other, 237 (7)
échapper, 92
écherrai, 313 (3, note)
échoir, 151
éclore, 152
écrire, 105, 317, 318 (*c*)
ei, pronunciation of, 13
Elements of the French Language, 276 *sq.*
  Keltic, 276 (*A*)
  Greek, 276 (*B*)
  German, 276 (*C*)
  Latin, 276 (*D*)
em, pronunciation of, 14
émail, 170 (3)
empaqueter, 54
empereur, 187 (8)
en, pronunciation of, 12, 13, 14, 19
en, 196 (*b*), 233, 383, 387
en (= in the year), 247
enchanteur, 187 (7)
encore, 386
enfant, 182 (6)
enfin, 386
s'enfuir, 47 (note)
enormément, 258 (1)
enseigne, 183
ensemble, 386
entirely, 238 (9, note)
entre, 7
s'entr'aider, 7, 83
entresol, 172 (*D*, note 3)
enverrai, 313 (3)
envers, 387
environ, 386
envoyer, 62
épais, 351 (*B*)
épousseter, 54
ès, 335 (note to *des*)
ester, 318 (*A*)
et, 19 (6), 388
étiqueter, 54
être, 32, 331
Européen, 185
even, 238 (10, *c*)
every, each, 237 (1, 9)
every one, 236 (1), 238 (9
everything, 238 (9)
exécuteur, 187 (7)
exemple, 183
expérimental, 189 (2)
expirer, 91
exprès, 187 (3), 351 (*B*)
expressément, 258 (2)
extraire, 111

F.

Faillir, 153, 318 (*B*)
faire, 115, 321
faites, 305 (2), 307 (note)
falloir, 140. 296 (4), 323 (*C*)
fat, 187 (10)
fatal, 189 (2)
faudra, 313 (3)
faut, il faut, 94, 140
faute, 387
faux, 187 (1), 300, 302, 351 (note)
favori, 187 (5), 351 (*D*)
ferai, 96, 313 (2)
feu, 189 (1)
feuilleter, 54, 58
final, 189 (2)
first, 251
fleurir, 67
fois, 383
follement, 258 (1)
font, 306
forfaire, 141
fou, 187 (6), 351 (*C*)
foudre, 182 (7)
fourbe, 183
Fractional numbers, 255
frais, 187 (3). 352
frais-cueilli, 189 (3)
franc, 187 (2), 352
franchement, 258 (2)
French, elements of, 276
  Old French, 277
  Modern French, 278
frire, 154. 318 (*C*)
frugal, 189 (2)
fuire, 47, 287
Future, 310, 313

G.

G, pronunciation of, 16, 19
galment, 258 (1)
garde, 183
geler, 54
Gender, see *Nouns*

genou, 170 (1)
gens, 168, 182 (8)
gentil, 187 (5)
gentiment, 258 (2)
gésir, 155, 323 (*A*)
glacial, 189 (2)
goutte, 384
gouverneur, 187 (7)
grand'mère, 172 (*B*), 349
graveur, 187 (9)
grec, 187 (2), 352 (note 2)
greffe, 183
grognon, 187 (10)
gros, 351 (*B*)
guères, 383
guide, 183
Gutturals, 5

H.

H, pronunciation of, 16
haïr, 65
harceler, 54
hébreu, hébraïque, 187 (10)
hélas, 390
héros, 185
hibou, 170 (1)
hier, 383
Homonyms, 6
hormis, hors, 387
hôte, 185
hôtel-Dieu, 172 (*A*)
however, 237 (2, *c*)
how many=que, 225 (note)
howsoever, 236 (9), 237 (2, *c*)
huit, 7
huitaine, 7
huitième, 7
hymne, 183
Hyphen, 10

I.

I, elision of, 7
i, pronunciation of, 12
idiot, 187 (3), 353
immensément, 258 (1)
Imperfect, 308
importunément, 258 (2)
impunément, 258
in, *translated by* de, 193 (*g*)
Inceptive verbs } 284, 285
Inchoative verbs }
incommodément, 258 (1)
Indefinite article, 164
induire, 100
Infinitive, 26
initial, 189 (2)
inquiet, 187 (3), 353
inspecteur, 187 (7)
instruire, 109
interdire, 104
Interjections, 273, 274, 390
Interrogation, simple, 71
,, periphrastic, 74, 79, 224
introduire, 100
inventeur, 187 (7)
irai, 313 (1)
issir, 318 (*B*)
issu, 141
ivre-mort, 189 (3)

J.

Jadis, 386
jamais, 386
je, 20
jeter, 53, 296 (note 2)
joindre, 103
joujou, 170 (1)
jovial, 189 (2)
jumeau, 187 (6)
jusque, 7

K.

Keltic language, 278

L.

L, pronunciation of, 15
là, 383
labial, 189 (2)
Labials, 5
larron, 185
légèrement, 258 (2)
lentement, 258 (3)
Letters, 1
lèz, 387
lingual, 189 (2)
linot, 185
Liquids, 5, 15
lire, 323 (*B*)
livre, 183
l'on, on, 236 (4)
loin, 383
long, 352 (note 1)
longtemps, 386
longuement, 258 (2)
lors, 386
lorsque, 388
loup, 185
l'un et l'autre, 238 (8)
l'un l'autre, 238 (7)

M.

M, pronunciation of, 14
madame, 163, 205 (note)
mademoiselle, 205 (note)
maint, 237 (4), 371
maintenant, 386
mais, 387
mais oui, 7
maître, 185
mal, 192, 383
malfaire, 141
malgré, 387
malin, 187 (5), 351 (*D*)
manche, 183
manger, 50
manœuvre, 183
many a, 237 (4)
many a one, 238 (5, note)
matinal, 189 (2)
maudire, 104
mauvais, 187 (3), 191
médial, 189 (2)
médicinal, 189 (2, note)
méfaire, 141
même, 202 (4), 371, 238 (10)
mémoire, 183
mener, 51, 296 (2)
ment, 303 (3)
mental, 189 (2, note)
mentir, 41, 287, 314
merci, 183
met, 303 (3)
mettre, 106, 315, 321
mie, 363, 384
mien, 365
mieux,
mil. mille, 245
million, 246
minet, 185
mode, 183
mollement, 258
moins, 383
Months, names of, 20
Moods, 25, 289
morbleu, 390
mou, 187 (6), 351 (*C*)
moudre, 124, 303 (3), 317, 323 (*B*)
moule, 183
mourir, 96, 133, 296 (5), 313, (2, 4), 323 (*A*)
mousse, 183
mouvoir, 134, 296 (5), 313 (2), 323 (*c*)
much, many (=beaucoup, bien), 167, 260 (2)
muet, 353
mulet, 185

Multiplicative numbers, 256

N.

N, mute, 14
naguère, 386
naître, 107, 318 (*c*), 323 (*B*, note to *vivre*)
narval, 170 (2)
Nasal sounds, 14
nasal, 189 (2)
natal, 189 (2)
naval, 189 (2)
ne, 383
néanmoins, 388
nearly (= faillir), 153 (note)
nègre, 185
net, 353
ni, 388
niais, 187 (3)
no (= ne...pas ; non), 238 (1, 2), 264 (3)
nobody, 236 (5)
no one, 236 (5), 238 (1, 2, 3)
none, 238 (1, 2), 383
nopal, 170 (2)
not one, 238 (1, 2)
not so...as, 193 (*d*)
nothing, 238, 236 (5, 8)
Nouns, gender of, 175, 182 *sq.*, 342
,, plural of, 169 *sq.*
,, cases of, 338
nouveau, 187 (6), 351 (*B*)
nul, 238 (2), 351 (*B*), 371
Numbers, cardinal, 239, 372
,, ordinal, 239, 379
nouvellement, 258 (1)
nuire, 100
nûment, 258 (1)

O.

O, pronunciation of, 12
obscurément, 258 (2)
oc, langue d'oc, 277
œ, pronunciation of, 13
œil, 170 (5)
œuvre, 182 (9)
office, 183
offrir, 43, 287, 301 (6), 303
oi, pronunciation of, 13
oïl, langue d'oïl, 277, 386
Old French, 277
on, l'on, 236 (4), 371
one (= they, people), 236 (4)
ont, 306, 318 (*A*, note)
onze, onzième, 7, 240, 244
or, 387, 388
Ordinal numbers, 249
orge, 187 (10)
orgue, 182
Orthographical signs, 6
other, others, 236 (6), 238 (6)
où (used as a pronoun), 335
ouate, 7
oui, 7. 386
ouïr, 141, 318 (*B*)
outre, 387
ouvrir, 43, 301 (6), 303 (1)
oval, 189 (2)
oyer, 318 (*B*)

P.

P, pronunciation of, 16
page, 183
paillasse, 183
pair, 185
paître, 125, 323 (*B*)
pal, 170 (2)
palme, 183
pantomime, 183
Pâques, 182 (11)
par, 387
de par (= parte), 341
paraître, 94, 120 (note), 323 (*B*)
parallèle, 183
parbleu, 390
parceque, 388
parmi, 387
Participles, 27
partir, 41, 287, 303 (3), 314
Partitive articles, 165
partout, 386
pas (point), 384
pascal, 189 (2)
patronal, 189 (2, note)
payer, 60 (note)
pêcheur, 187 (7)
pêcheur, 187 (note)
peintre, 187 (9)
peler, 54, 56
pénal, 189 (2)
pendule, 183
période, 182 (12)
persécuteur, 187 (7)
personne, 28, 183, 236 (5), 371, 384
Person-endings, 300
petit, 191
petit-lait, 168
petites-maisons, 168
petits-enfants, 168
peu, 192, 383
peux, 300, 302
Philippe, 185
pied-à-terre, 172 (*C*)
pique, 183
pis, 383
plaindre, 103
plaire, 126, 323 (*B*)
pleuvoir, 94, 141, 323 (*C*)
plumail, 170 (3)
plupart, 167
Plural of nouns, 169, 278
,, of adjectives, 354 *sq.*
plus, 383
plusieurs, 187 (6), 238 (4), 371
plutôt, 388
poêle, 183
poète, 187 (9)
posséder, 52
poste, 183
pou, 170 (1)
pour ; pour que, 387, 388
pourrai, 96, 313 (3)
pourvoir, 117 (note), 313 (3, note)
pouvoir, 135, 296 (5), 323 (*C*)
précisément, 258 (2)
préfix, 108, 187 (1), 351
prendre, 321
Prepositions, 266 *sq.*
présentement, 258 (3)
presque, 7, 386
prêt, 187 (3), 353
prévaloir, 138 (note)
prévenir, 116
prévoir, 117 (note), 313 (3, note)
prime-sautier, 381
prince, 185
procureur, 187 (7)
produire, 100
profès, 351 (*B*), 187 (3)
profondément, 258 (2)
profusément, 258 (2)
Pronouns, 194 *sq.*, 360 *sq.*
Pronunciation, 12 *sq.*, 244
prophète, 185
Provençal, 277
public, 352 (note 1)
puis, 383
puisque, 7, 388
Punctuation, signs of, 11

Q.

Q, pronunciation of, 16
quand, 383
quantes, 271
quart, 381 (4)
quatre yeux, 19 (note)
que (= how, many, why), 225 (note), 387
,, and *combien*, 260 (note 3)
quel, quelle, 218
quelconque, 237 (3), 371
quelque, 7, 237 (2), 371
quelque chose, 236 (7)
quelque...que, 237 (2, *b*)
quelqu'un, 236 (3), 371
quérir, 143
qui *and* lequel, 231, 232
quiconque, 236 (3), 371
quint, 381 (5)
quinze-vingt, 377
qui que, 236 (9)
quite, 238 (9, note)
quoique, quoi que, 236 (9), 388

R.

R, pronunciation of, 16
ras, 187 (3), 351 (*B*)
recevoir, recevrai, 96, 136, 296 (3), 313 (2)
redire, 104
réduire, 100
régal, 170 (2)
régler, 296 (2)
Reinforcement of vowels, 296
remise, 183
relâche, 183
renaître, 107
rentraire, 111
renvoyer, 62, 313 (note)
repaître, 125
repartir, répartir, 41 (note)
repentir, se, 40, 287, 303 (3), 314
replet, 187 (3), 353
résolu, résous, 127 (2)
résoudre, 127, 317
résous, 187 (10)
ressortir, 41 (note)
rester *and* demeurer, 90
rien, 236 (5, 8), 371, 384
rire, 109, 321
Romance languages, 275
romane, 187 (10)
rompre, 70
roux, 187 (1), 351

S.

S, pronunciation of, 16, 19
s, added to several tenses, 300, 301, 308
s, x, and z, as signs of the plural, 278 (*c*)
saillir, 43 (note), 287, 303
same, 238 (10)
sans, sans que, 387, 388
saurai, 96, 313 (3)
savoir, 137, 296 (6), 323 (*C*)
sec, 187 (2), 352)
secret, 187 (3), 353
séduire, 100
self, 238 (10)
selon, 387
sentir, 40, 287, 303 (3), 314
seoir, 156, 321
serai, 313 (11)
serval, 170 (2)
serviteur, 187 (8)
several, 238 (4)
si, 383
Sibilants, 5
sied, siéra, 94, 114, 303 (3), 313 (3)
Signs of punctuation, 11
so, 263 (3)
solde, 183
some, 236 (2), 237 (2)
something, 238 (8)
somme, 183
sortir, 41, 287, 303 (3), 314
soudain, 383
souffrir, 43, 287, 301 (6), 303 (note)
soupirail, 170 (3)
sourdre, 157, 321
sourire, 183
sous-pied, 172 (*D*, note 3)
soustraire, 111
souvent, 383
Subjunctive, 307 (*b*)
Substantive, see *Noun*
subvenir, 86, 116
such, 238 (5)
suffire, 101
suivre, 110, 318 (*C*)
sujet, 353
Superlative in *issime*, 196 (1, note), 359
sur, 387
surseoir, 156

T.

T, the original *t* omitted, 303
taire, 128, 323 (*B*)
tandis, tandis que, 386, 388
tant, tant que, 383, 388
tard, 383
tel, 238 (5)
témoin, 187 (10)
tenir, 116, 296 (1), 313 (4), 320
Tenses, 29, 35, 36, 96, 204, 307
Terminations, 37, 298 *sq.*
tête-à-tête, 172 (*C*)
than = que, 193 (*b*)
than = de, 259 (2)
théatral, 189 (2)
then, 262
tiers, 187 (5), 351 (*D*), 381 (2)
tigre, 185
timbre-poste, 172 (*A*)
tiret, 10
tissu, 141
tôt, 383
toujours, 386
tour, 183
tout, 163, 188, 238 (9), 371
tout-puissant, 189 (3, note)
traducteur, 187 (9)
traduire, 100
traire, 91, 111, 141, 321
trait d'union, 10
traître, 185
traîtreusement, 258
transversal. 189 (2, note)
travail, 170 (5)
travers, à tr., 387
Tréma, 8
très, 383
tressaillir, 43, 287, 301 (6), 303 (1)
triomphe, 183
trop, 383
Troyen, 185

U.

U, pronunciation of, 7
uniformément, 258 (1)

V.

Va, 303 (2)
vague, 183
vaincre, 112, 318 (*C*)
valoir, 96, 138, 296 (4), 301, 302, 313 (3), 323 (*C*)
vantail, 170 (3)
vase, 183

véhémentement, 258 (3)
vélin, 187 (10)
vendeur, 187 (7)
vendre, 48
vengeur, 187 (7)
venir, 114, 296 (1), 313 (4), 320
Verbs, division of, 21, 279
  voices of, 24
  weak, 34, 281, 283
    1st conj., 38, 283
    2nd conj., 39—47. 284—287
    3rd conj., 48, 288
    peculiarities of the three weak conj., 50—70
  strong, 96, 281, 319
  auxiliary, 30, 325
  anomalous, 42
  reflective, 81
  reflective in French and not reflective in English, 82
  reciprocal, 83
  intransitive, 84, 85, 88 89
  impersonal, unipersonal, 93, 94
  in *ger*, 50
  in *ier*, 50
  like *mener*, 51
  like *posséder*, 51
  in *eler* and *eter*, 53—58, 296 (2)
  in *éger*, 59
  in *ayer*, *oyer*, *uyer*, 60
Verbs in *uer*, *ouer*, 63
  in *guer*, 63 (note)
  used interrogatively, 71
  used negatively, 75 *sq.*
  used interrogatively and negatively, 78
vers, 387
very, 262, 263 (2)
vêtir, 47, 287, 303 (3)
vieux, 187 (1, 6)
vingt, 241
virginal, 189 (2)
vitrail, 170 (3)
vivement, 258 (2)
vivre, 129, 323 (*B*)
vocal, 189 (2, note)
Voices, 80, 289
voici, 387
voile, 183
voilà, 387
voir, 117, 313 (3), 320
volonté, de la bonne v., 168
volontiers, 383
vont, 306
vouloir, 96, 139, 296 (5), 300, 302, 313 (3), 323 (*C*)
Vowels, 5, 12, 13
  reinforcement of, 296

W.

What, 225
what a, 220
whatever, 237 (2, *b*)
whatsoever, 236 (9), 237 (2, *b*)
who and which, 228
whoever, 236 (2)
whole, 238 (9)
  ,, the whole world, 238 (9, *d*)
whomsoever, 236 (9)
whose, 223, 229, 230
whosoever, 236 (2, 9)
which, 228
why, 225 (note)

X.

X, pronunciation, 16, 19
x, s, and z, as signs of the plural, 278 (*c*)

Y.

Y, 234, 383
y and là, 234 (*Obs.*)
year, in the year, 247
yes (= *oui* and *si*), 262 (2)

Z.

Z, see x

THE END.

London: R. Clay, Sons, and Taylor, Printers.

NEW EDITION.

Square, half bound, price 6s.

A FRENCH-ENGLISH AND ENGLISH-FRENCH DICTIONARY,

Adapted from the Dictionaries of Professor ALFRED ELWALL.

By GUSTAVE MASSON, B.A.,

Assistant Master and Librarian in Harrow School.

With a List of the principal Diverging Derivations, Chronological and Historical Tables, showing the developments of Literature and Language between the death of Charlemagne, 814 A.D., and that of Louis Philippe, 1850; also a List of the principal Chronicles and Memoirs on the History of France which have appeared up to the present time, the French Republican Calendar compared with the Gregorian, and a Chronological List of the principal French Newspapers published during the Revolution and the First Empire.

"The work is beautifully printed, and of a portable size. We think that Mr. Masson has successfully avoided the danger of excessive brevity; he gives all the principal idiomatic expressions, and with the assistance supplied by this lexicon no pupil should be deterred henceforward from taking up the study of French."—*School Board Chronicle.*

"We have carefully turned over the leaves, and find the rendering both from French to English and from English to French, free from the pedantry which generally distinguishes Dictionaries, as well as from the ignorance of English which is the characteristic of French Dictionaries. . . . Altogether the work is by many degrees the most useful Dictionary that the student can obtain."—*Educational Times.*

"A book which any student, whatever may be the degree of his advancement in the language, would do well to have on the table, close at hand whilst he is reading. . . . Mr. Masson's handy volume may lie on the student's encumbered table, or the clerk's desk, and find a place in the tourist's carpet bag, besides its utility to school-boys, whom it supplies as quickly as possible with the information which they are most likely to require."—*Saturday Review.*

MACMILLAN & CO., LONDON.

MACMILLAN'S
PROGRESSIVE FRENCH COURSE.

BY

G. EUGENE FASNACHT,

Senior Master of Modern Languages, Harpur Foundation Modern School, Bedford.

I.—FIRST YEAR. Containing Easy Lessons on the Regular Accidence. Extra fcap. 8vo. 1s.

II.—SECOND YEAR. Containing Conversational Lessons on Systematic Accidence and Elementary Syntax, with Philological Illustrations and Etymological Vocabulary. Extra Fcap. 8vo. 1s. 6d.

III.—THIRD YEAR. Containing a Systematic Syntax and Lessons in Composition.

*** *Other parts to follow.*

The *Educational Times* says of Part I.:—"This is a very good Exercise Book for the pupil's first year's course in French. Each Lesson exactly occupies a page, with Vocabulary, Rule, and a Double Exercise in French and English, an arrangement which is not without its convenience, as the pupil has before him all the materials of his lesson without turning to another part of the book .... A brief Appendix gives, in a very neat form, the Regular Verbs, and the whole concludes with a general Vocabulary of the words used throughout the book, arranged alphabetically."

MACMILLAN & CO., LONDON.

Just published, price 2s. 6d.

MACMILLAN'S PROGRESSIVE FRENCH READER.

BY

G. EUGENE FASNACHT,

Senior Master of Modern Languages, Harpur Trust Modern School, Author of Macmillan's "Progressive French and German Courses," &c.

I.—FIRST YEAR

CONTAINING

TALES, HISTORICAL EXTRACTS, LETTERS, DIALOGUES, FABLES, BALLADS, NURSERY SONGS, ETC.

WITH TWO VOCABULARIES.

I.—IN THE ORDER OF SUBJECTS.
II.—IN ALPHABETICAL ORDER.

"The selection of passages is unusually good and varied—while the strong limp binding is eminently calculated to withstand the rude treatment accorded to elementary school books."—*Examiner.*

"The reading lessons are principally selected from authors of very high standing, and are well designed to interest the young pupils, and to instruct them in the subjects about which they read, as well as the language in which the extracts are written."—*School Board Chronicle.*

MACMILLAN & CO., LONDON.

MACMILLAN AND CO.'S
PUBLICATIONS.

Works by HERMANN BREYMANN, Ph.D., Professor of Philology in the University of Munich.

FIRST FRENCH EXERCISE BOOK. Extra fcap. 8vo. *4s. 6d.*

SECOND FRENCH EXERCISE BOOK. Extra fcap. 8vo. *2s. 6d.*

FIRST LESSONS IN FRENCH. A Book for Beginners. By H. COURTHORPE BOWEN, Head Master of the Grocers' Company Schools, Hackney Downs. Extra fcap. 8vo. *1s.*

MOLIÈRE—LE MALADE IMAGINAIRE. Comédie en Trois Actes. Edited, with Introduction and Notes, by F. TARVER, M.A., Assistant Master at Eton College. Fcap. 8vo. *2s. 6d.*

BEAUMARCHAIS—LE BARBIER DE SÉVILLE; OU, LA PRÉCAUTION INUTILE. Comédie en Quatre Actes. Edited, with Biographical Introduction and Notes, by J. P. BLOUET, B.A., Univ. Gallic., French Master at St. Paul's School. Fcap. 8vo. *3s. 6d.*

NEW GUIDE TO GERMAN CONVERSATION: containing an Alphabetical List of nearly 800 Familiar Words, followed by Exercises; Vocabulary of Words in frequent use; Familiar Phrases and Dialogues; a Sketch of German Literature, Idiomatic Expressions, &c. By L. PYLODET. 18mo. cloth limp. *2s. 6d.*

A SYNOPSIS OF GERMAN GRAMMAR. From the above. 18mo. *6d.*

AN HOMERIC DICTIONARY. For Use in Schools and Colleges. Translated from the German of Dr. G. AUTENRIETH, with Additions and Corrections by R. P. KEEP, Ph.D. With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo. *6s.*

MACMILLAN & CO., LONDON.

In Extra Fcap. 8vo., cloth,

MACMILLAN'S PROGRESSIVE GERMAN COURSE.

BY

G. EUGENE FASNACHT,

Senior Master of Modern Languages, Harpur Foundation Modern School, Bedford, Author of "The Progressive French Course."

PART I. Extra fcap. 8vo. 1*s.* 6*d.*

CONTAINING EASY LESSONS AND RULES ON THE REGULAR ACCIDENCE.

PART II. Extra fcap. 8vo. 2*s.*

CONTAINING CONVERSATIONAL LESSONS ON SYSTEMATIC ACCIDENCE AND ELEMENTARY SYNTAX, WITH PHILOLOGICAL ILLUSTRATIONS AND ETYMOLOGICAL VOCABULARY.

INTRODUCTION.

THE plan of this German Course is, on the whole, the same as that of the author's French Course. Every chapter of the whole work has, during several years before its appearance in print, been put to the practical test of teaching in the class-room. The rules given are few, because the paradigms of declensions and conjugations are framed on a system calculated to bring out the contrast between English and German, and between the WEAK and STRONG forms in the latter language, much more effectively than any rules could do. All matter of secondary importance has either been relegated to the Appendix—if considered useful for reference—or altogether eliminated, if not deemed indispensable for a fair knowledge of the language. In the Syntax the Order of Words, that perpetual stumbling-block in the way of the Student, has not only been elucidated in a separate chapter, but is also impressed on the student's mind by copious examples in almost every exercise.

MACMILLAN & CO., LONDON.

In Crown 8vo., price 7s. 6d.

A COMPENDIOUS

GERMAN AND ENGLISH DICTIONARY.

(GERMAN-ENGLISH AND ENGLISH-GERMAN.)

WITH NOTATION OF CORRESPONDENCES AND BRIEF ETYMOLOGIES.

BY

W. D. WHITNEY,

Professor of Sanskrit and Comparative Philology in Yale College Author of "A Compendious German Grammar" and a "German Reader," &c.

ASSISTED BY

A. H. EDGREN,

Instructor in Modern Languages in Yale College.

"By careful arrangement and the use of small but clear type, a great mass of matter has been got into a comparatively small space, the result being a book of very convenient size, containing all the words that a student is at all likely to meet with. Much attention has been paid to etymology, and the community of origin of some words in the two languages and the analogy between others are made evident by the adoption of types differing from that ordinarily employed. The genders and principal inflections of all nouns are given, and, to make the work complete, a list of irregular verbs is appended to each part."—*Spectator.*

BY PROFESSOR WHITNEY.

A COMPENDIOUS GERMAN GRAMMAR. Crown 8vo. 4*s.* 6*d.*

A GERMAN READER IN PROSE AND VERSE. With Notes and Vocabulary. Crown 8vo. 5*s.*

MACMILLAN & CO., LONDON.

September, 1883.

A

CATALOGUE

OF

EDUCATIONAL BOOKS

PUBLISHED BY

MACMILLAN AND CO.,

BEDFORD STREET, STRAND, LONDON.

INDEX.

	PAGE
CLASSICAL—	
Elementary Classics	3
Classical Series	6
Classical Library (1) Texts, (2) Translations	11
Grammar, Composition, and Philology	15
Antiquities, Ancient History, and Philosophy	20
MATHEMATICS—	
Arithmetic	22
Algebra	24
Euclid and Elementary Geometry	24
Mensuration	25
Higher Mathematics	26
SCIENCE—	
Natural Philosophy	33
Astronomy	37
Chemistry	38
Biology	39
Medicine	43
Anthropology	44
Physical Geography and Geology	44
Agriculture	45
Political Economy	45
Mental and Moral Philosophy	46
HISTORY AND GEOGRAPHY	47
MODERN LANGUAGES AND LITERATURE—	
English Grammar and Literature	51
Globe Readers	52
Globe Readings	52
Literature Primers	53
Reading Books	54
Copy Books	54
FRENCH	58
Progressive French Course	59
Progressive French Readers	59
FOREIGN SCHOOL CLASSICS—	
French	59
German	61
GERMAN—	
Progressive German Course	60
MODERN GREEK	61
ITALIAN	62
DOMESTIC ECONOMY	62
ART AND KINDRED SUBJECTS	63
WORKS ON TEACHING	63
DIVINITY	64

September, 1883.

A CATALOGUE

OF

EDUCATIONAL BOOKS

PUBLISHED BY

MACMILLAN & CO.,

BEDFORD STREET, STRAND, LONDON.

CLASSICS.

ELEMENTARY CLASSICS.

18mo, eighteenpence each.

THIS SERIES FALLS INTO TWO CLASSES—

(1) First Reading Books for Beginners, provided not only with **Introductions and Notes**, but with **Vocabularies.**

(2) Stepping-stones to the study of particular authors, intended for more advanced students who are beginning to read such authors as Terence, Plato, the Attic Dramatists, and the harder parts of Cicero, Horace, Virgil, and Thucydides.

These are provided with Introductions and Notes, **but no Vocabulary.** The Publishers have been led to provide the more strictly Elementary Books with Vocabularies by the representations of many teachers, who hold that beginners do not understand the use of a Dictionary, and of others who, in the case of the very large class of middle-class schools where the cost of books is a serious consideration, advocate the Vocabulary system on grounds of economy. It is hoped that the two parts of the Series, fitting into one another, may together fulfil all the requirements of Elementary and Preparatory Schools, and the Lower Forms of Public Schools.

The following Elementary Books, with Introductions, Notes, and Vocabularies, are either ready or in preparation:—

Cæsar.—THE GALLIC WAR. BOOK I. Edited by A. S. WALPOLE, M.A. [*Ready.*

THE GALLIC WAR. BOOKS II. AND III. Edited by W. G. RUTHERFORD, M.A., Head-Master of Westminster School. [*Ready.*

THE GALLIC WAR. SCENES FROM BOOKS V. AND VI. Edited by C. COLBECK, M.A., Assistant-Master at Harrow; formerly Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge. [*Ready.* VOCABULARY *in preparation.*

Cicero.—DE SENECTUTE. Edited by E. S. SHUCKBURGH, M.A., late Fellow of Emmanuel College, Cambridge; Assistant-Master at Eton College. [*In preparation.*

DE AMICITIA. By the same Editor. [*In preparation.*

Eutropii Historia Romana.—SELECTIONS. Edited by WILLIAM WELCH, Assistant-Master at Surrey County School, Cranleigh. [*In the press.*

Greek Testament.—SELECTIONS FROM THE GOSPELS. Edited by Rev. G. F. MACLEAR, D.D., Warden of St. Augustine's College, Canterbury. [*In preparation.*

Homer.—ILIAD. BOOK I. Edited by Rev. JOHN BOND, M.A., and A. S. WALPOLE, M.A. [*In preparation.*

ILIAD. BOOK XVIII. THE ARMS OF ACHILLES. Edited by S. R. JAMES, M.A., Assistant-Master at Eton College. [*Ready.* VOCABULARY *in preparation.*

ODYSSEY. BOOK I. Edited by Rev. JOHN BOND, M.A., and A. S. WALPOLE, M.A. [*Ready.*

Horace.—ODES. BOOKS I.—III. Edited by T. E. PAGE, M.A., late Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge; Assistant-Master at the Charterhouse. Each 1*s.* 6*d.* [*Ready.* VOCABULARIES *in preparation.*

BOOK IV. By the same Editor. [*In the press.*

Livy.—BOOK I. Edited by H. M. STEPHENSON, M.A., Head Master of St. Peter's School, York. [*Ready.*

THE HANNIBALIAN WAR. Being part of the XXI. AND XXII. BOOKS OF LIVY, adapted for the use of beginners, by G. C. MACAULAY, M.A., Assistant-Master at Rugby; formerly Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge. [*Ready.*

Ovid.—SELECTIONS. Edited by E. S. SHUCKBURGH, M.A. [*Ready.* VOCABULARY *in preparation.*

Phædrus.—SELECT FABLES. Edited by A. S. WALPOLE, M.A. [*In the press.*

Thucydides.—THE RISE OF THE ATHENIAN EMPIRE. BOOK I. CC. LXXXIX. — CXVIII. AND CXXVIII. — CXXXVIII. Edited by F. H. COLSON, B.A., Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge; Assistant-Master at Clifton College. [*In preparation.*

Virgil.—ÆNEID. BOOK I. Edited by A. S. WALPOLE, M.A. [*Ready.*

ÆNEID. BOOK V. Edited by Rev. A. CALVERT, M.A., Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge. [*Ready.*

SELECTIONS. Edited by E. S. SHUCKBURGH, M.A. [*Ready.*

Xenophon.—ANABASIS. BOOK I. Edited by A. S. WALPOLE, M.A. [*Ready.*

The following more advanced Books, with Introductions and Notes, **but no Vocabulary,** are either ready, or in preparation:—

Cicero.—SELECT LETTERS. Edited by Rev. G. E. JEANS, M.A., Fellow of Hertford College, Oxford, and Assistant-Master at Haileybury College. [*Ready.*

Euripides.—HECUBA. Edited by Rev. JOHN BOND, M.A. and A. S. WALPOLE, M.A. [*Ready.*

Herodotus.—SELECTIONS FROM BOOKS VII. AND VIII. THE EXPEDITION OF XERXES. Edited by A. H. COOKE, M.A., Fellow and Lecturer of King's College, Cambridge. [*Ready.*

Horace. — SELECTIONS FROM THE SATIRES AND EPISTLES. Edited by Rev. W. J. V. BAKER, M.A., Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge; Assistant-Master at Marlborough. [*Ready.*

Livy.—THE LAST TWO KINGS OF MACEDON. SCENES FROM THE LAST DECADE OF LIVY. Selected and Edited by F. H. RAWLINS, M.A., Fellow of King's College, Cambridge; and Assistant-Master at Eton College. [*In preparation.*

Plato.—EUTHYPHRO AND MENEXENUS. Edited by C. E. GRAVES, M.A., Classical Lecturer and late Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge. [*Ready.*

Terence.—SCENES FROM THE ANDRIA. Edited by F. W. CORNISH, M.A., Assistant-Master at Eton College. [*In the press.*

The Greek Elegiac Poets. — FROM CALLINUS TO CALLIMACHUS. Selected and Edited by Rev. HERBERT KYNASTON, M.A., Principal of Cheltenham College, and formerly Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge. [*Ready.*

Thucydides.—BOOK IV. CHS. I.—XLI. THE CAPTURE OF SPHACTERIA. Edited by C. E. GRAVES, M.A. [*Ready.*

Virgil.—GEORGICS. BOOK II. Edited by Rev. J. H. SKRINE, M.A., late Fellow of Merton College, Oxford; Assistant-Master at Uppingham. [*Ready.*

*** *Other Volumes to follow.*

CLASSICAL SERIES FOR COLLEGES AND SCHOOLS.

Fcap. 8vo.

Being select portions of Greek and Latin authors, edited with Introductions and Notes, for the use of Middle and Upper forms of Schools, or of candidates for Public Examinations at the Universities and elsewhere.

Æschines.— IN CTESIPHONTEM. Edited by Rev. T. GWATKIN, M.A., late Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge. [*In the press.*

Æschylus. — PERSÆ. Edited by A. O. PRICKARD, M.A., Fellow and Tutor of New College, Oxford. With Map. 3*s.* 6*d.*

Catullus.—SELECT POEMS. Edited by F. P. SIMPSON, B.A., late Scholar of Balliol College, Oxford. New and Revised Edition. 5*s.*

Cicero.—THE ACADEMICA. Edited by JAMES REID, M.L., Fellow of Caius College, Cambridge. 4*s.* 6*d.*

THE CATILINE ORATIONS. From the German of KARL HALM. Edited, with Additions, by A. S. WILKINS, M.A., Professor of Latin at the Owens College, Manchester. New Edition. 3*s.* 6*d.*

PRO LEGE MANILIA. Edited after HALM by Professor A. S. WILKINS, M.A. 3*s.* 6*d.*

THE SECOND PHILIPPIC ORATION. From the German of KARL HALM. Edited, with Corrections and Additions, by JOHN E. B. MAYOR, Professor of Latin in the University of Cambridge, and Fellow of St. John's College. New Edition, revised. 5*s.*

PRO ROSCIO AMERINO. Edited, after HALM, by E. H. DONKIN, M.A., late Scholar of Lincoln College, Oxford; Assistant-Master at Sherborne School. 4*s.* 6*d.*

PRO P. SESTIO. Edited by Rev. H. A. HOLDEN, M.A., LL.D., late Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge; and Classical Examiner to the University of London. 5*s.*

Demosthenes.—DE CORONA. Edited by B. DRAKE, M.A., late Fellow of King's College, Cambridge. New and revised Edition. 4*s.* 6*d.*

ADVERSUS LEPTINEM. Edited by Rev. J. R. KING, M.A., Fellow and Tutor of Oriel College, Oxford. 4*s.* 6*d.*

THE FIRST PHILIPPIC. Edited, after C. REHDANTZ, by Rev. T. GWATKIN, M.A., late fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge. 2*s.* 6*d.*

Euripides.—BACCHAE. Edited by E. S. SHUCKBURGH, M.A., Assistant-Master at Eton College. [*In preparation.*

HIPPOLYTUS. Edited by J. P. MAHAFFY, M.A., Fellow and Professor of Ancient History in Trinity College, Dublin, and J. B. BURY, Scholar of Trinity College, Dublin. 3*s.* 6*d.*

Euripides.—MEDEA. Edited by A. W. VERRALL, M.A., Fellow and Lecturer of Trinity College, Cambridge. 3*s.* 6*d.*

IPHIGENIA IN TAURIS. Edited by E. B. ENGLAND, M.A., Lecturer at the Owens College, Manchester. [*In the press.*

Herodotus.—BOOKS V. AND VI. Edited by Rev. A. H. COOKE, M.A., Fellow of King's College, Cambridge. [*In preparation.*

BOOKS VII. AND VIII. THE INVASION OF GREECE BY XERXES. Edited by THOMAS CASE, M.A., formerly Fellow of Brasenose College, Oxford. [*In preparation.*

Homer.—ILIAD. BOOKS I., IX., XI., XVI.—XXIV. THE STORY OF ACHILLES. Edited by the late J. H. PRATT, M.A., and WALTER LEAF, M.A., Fellows of Trinity College, Cambridge. 6*s.*

ODYSSEY. BOOKS IX.—XII. THE NARRATIVE OF ODYSSEUS. Edited by Prof. JOHN E. B. MAYOR. Part I. 3*s.*

ODYSSEY. BOOKS XXI.—XXIV. THE TRIUMPH OF ODYSSEUS. Edited by S. G. HAMILTON, B.A., Fellow of Hertford College, Oxford. 3*s.* 6*d.*

Horace.—THE ODES AND CARMEN SECULARE. Edited by T. E. PAGE, M.A., formerly Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge; Assistant-Master at Charterhouse. 6*s.*

THE ODES. BOOK IV. and CARMEN SECULARE. Edited by T. E. PAGE, M.A. 2*s.*

THE SATIRES. Edited by ARTHUR PALMER, M.A., Fellow of Trinity College, Dublin; Professor of Latin in the University of Dublin. 6*s.*

THE EPISTLES AND ARS POETICA. Edited by Professor A. S. WILKINS, M.A. [*In the press.*

Juvenal. Edited, for the Use of Schools, by E. G. HARDY, M.A., Head-Master of Grantham Grammar School; late Fellow of Jesus College, Oxford. [*In the press.*

SELECT SATIRES. Edited by Professor JOHN E. B. MAYOR. X. AND XI. 3*s.* 6*d.* XII.—XVI. 4*s.* 6*d.*

Livy.—BOOKS II. AND III. Edited by Rev. H. M. STEPHENSON, M.A., Head-Master of St. Peter's School, York. 5*s.*

BOOKS XXI. AND XXII. Edited by the Rev. W. W. CAPES, M.A., Reader in Ancient History at Oxford. With Maps. 5*s.*

BOOKS XXIII AND XXIV. Edited by G. C. MACAULAY, M.A., Assistant-Master at Rugby. [*In preparation.*

Lucretius. BOOKS I.—III. Edited by J. H. WARBURTON LEE, M.A., late Scholar of Corpus Christi College, Oxford, and Assistant-Master at Rossall. [*In preparation.*

Lysias.—SELECT ORATIONS. Edited by E. S. SHUCKBURGH, M.A., Assistant-Master at Eton College. 6*s.*

Martial. — SELECT EPIGRAMS. Edited by Rev. H. M. STEPHENSON, M.A. 6*s.*

Ovid.—FASTI. Edited by G. H. HALLAM, M.A., Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge, and Assistant-Master at Harrow. With Maps. 5*s.*

HEROIDUM EPISTULÆ XIII. Edited by E. S. SHUCKBURGH, M.A. 4*s.* 6*d.*

METAMORPHOSES. BOOKS XIII. AND XIV. Edited by C. SIMMONS, M.A. [*In the press.*

Plato.—MENO. Edited by E. S. THOMPSON, M.A., Fellow of Christ's College, Cambridge. [*In preparation.*

APOLOGY AND CRITO. Edited by F. J. H. JENKINSON, M.A., Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge. [*In preparation.*

THE REPUBLIC. BOOKS I.—V. Edited by T. H. WARREN, M.A., Fellow of Magdalen College, Oxford. [*In preparation.*

Plautus.—MILES GLORIOSUS. Edited by R. Y. TYRRELL, M.A., Fellow and Professor of Greek in Trinity College, Dublin. 5*s.*

Pliny.—LETTERS. BOOK III. Edited by Professor JOHN E. B. MAYOR. With Life of Pliny by G. H. RENDALL, M.A. 5*s.*

Plutarch.—LIFE OF THEMISTOKLES. Edited by Rev. H. A. HOLDEN, M.A., LL.D. 5*s.*

Propertius.—SELECT POEMS. Edited by Professor J. P. POSTGATE, M.A., Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge. 6*s.*

Sallust.—CATILINE AND JUGURTHA. Edited by C. MERIVALE, D.D., Dean of Ely. New Edition, carefully revised and enlarged, 4*s.* 6*d.* Or separately, 2*s.* 6*d.* each.

Sophocles.—ANTIGONE. Edited by Rev. JOHN BOND, M.A., and A. S. WALPOLE, M.A. [*In preparation.*

Tacitus.—AGRICOLA AND GERMANIA. Edited by A. J. CHURCH, M.A., and W. J. BRODRIBB, M.A., Translators of Tacitus. New Edition, 3*s.* 6*d.* Or separately, 2*s.* each.

THE ANNALS. BOOK VI. By the same Editors. 2*s.* 6*d.*

THE HISTORY. BOOKS I. AND II. Edited by C. E. GRAVES, M.A. [*In preparation.*

Terence.—HAUTON TIMORUMENOS. Edited by E. S. SHUCKBURGH, M.A. 3*s.* With Translation, 4*s.* 6*d.*

PHORMIO. Edited by Rev. JOHN BOND, M.A., and A. S. WALPOLE, B.A. 4*s.* 6*d.*

Thucydides. BOOKS III. IV. AND V. Edited by C. E. GRAVES, M.A., Classical Lecturer, and late Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge. (To be published separately.)
[*Book IV. in the press.*

BOOKS VI. AND VII. THE SICILIAN EXPEDITION. Edited by the Rev. PERCIVAL FROST, M.A., late Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge. New Edition, revised and enlarged, with Map. 5*s.*

Tibullus.—SELECTIONS. Edited by Professor J. P. POSTGATE, M.A. [*In preparation.*

Virgil.—ÆNEID. BOOKS II. AND III. THE NARRATIVE OF ÆNEAS. Edited by E. W. HOWSON, M.A., Fellow of King's College, Cambridge, and Assistant-Master at HARROW. 3*s.*

Xenophon.—HELLENICA, BOOKS I. AND II. Edited by H. HAILSTONE, B.A., late Scholar of Peterhouse, Cambridge. With Map. 4*s.* 6*d.*

CYROPÆDIA. BOOKS VII. AND VIII. Edited by ALFRED GOODWIN, M.A., Professor of Greek in University College, London. 5*s.*

MEMORABILIA SOCRATIS. Edited by A. R. CLUER, B.A. Balliol College, Oxford. 6*s.*

THE ANABASIS. BOOKS I.—IV. Edited by Professors W. W. GOODWIN and J. W. WHITE. Adapted to Goodwin's Greek Grammar. With a Map. 5*s.*

Xenophon.—ECONOMICUS. Edited by Rev. H. A. HOLDEN, M.A., LL.D. [*In the press.*

HIERO. By the same Editor. [*In the press.*

*** *Other Volumes will follow.*

CLASSICAL LIBRARY.

(1) **Texts,** Edited with **Introductions and Notes,** for the use of Advanced Students. (2) **Commentaries and Translations.**

Æschylus.—THE EUMENIDES. The Greek Text, with Introduction, English Notes, and Verse Translation. By BERNARD DRAKE, M.A., late Fellow of King's College, Cambridge. 8vo. 5*s.*

AGAMEMNON, CHOEPHORŒ, AND EUMENIDES. Edited, with Introduction and Notes, by A. O. PRICKARD, M.A., Fellow and Tutor of New College, Oxford. 8vo. [*In preparation.*

Antoninus, Marcus Aurelius.—BOOK IV. OF THE MEDITATIONS. The Text Revised, with Translation and Notes, by HASTINGS CROSSLEY, M.A., Professor of Greek in Queen's College, Belfast. 8vo. 6*s.*

Aristotle.—THE METAPHYSICS. BOOK I. Translated by a Cambridge Graduate. 8vo. 5*s.* [*Book II. in preparation.*

THE POLITICS. Edited, after SUSEMIHL, by R. D. HICKS, M.A., Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge. 8vo. [*In the press.*

THE POLITICS. Translated by J. E. C. WELLDON, M.A., Fellow of King's College, Cambridge, and Master of Dulwich College. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

AN INTRODUCTION TO ARISTOTLE'S RHETORIC. With Analysis, Notes, and Appendices. By E. M. COPE, Fellow and Tutor of Trinity College, Cambridge. 8vo. 14*s.*

THE RHETORIC. Translated by J. E. C. WELLDON, M.A. [*In preparation.*

THE SOPHISTICI ELENCHI. With Translation and Notes by E. POSTE, M.A., Fellow of Oriel College, Oxford. 8vo. 8*s.* 6*d.*

Aristophanes.—THE BIRDS. Translated into English Verse, with Introduction, Notes, and Appendices, by B. H. KENNEDY, D.D., Regius Professor of Greek in the University of Cambridge. Crown 8vo. 6*s*. Help Notes to the same, for the use of Students, 1*s*. 6*d*.

Attic Orators.—FROM ANTIPHON TO ISAEOS. By R. C. JEBB, M.A., LL.D., Professor of Greek in the University of Glasgow. 2 vols. 8vo. 25*s*.

SELECTIONS FROM ANTIPHON, ANDOKIDES, LYSIAS, ISOKRATES, AND ISÆOS. Edited, with Notes, by Professor JEBB. Being a companion volume to the preceding work. 8vo. 12*s*. 6*d*.

Babrius. Edited, with Introductory Dissertations, Critical Notes, Commentary and Lexicon. By W. GUNION RUTHERFORD, M.A., Head-Master of Westminster School. 8vo. 12*s*. 6*d*.

Cicero.—THE ACADEMICA. The Text revised and explained by J. S. REID, M.L., Fellow of Caius College, Cambridge. New Edition. With Translation. 8vo. [*In the press*.

THE ACADEMICS. Translated by J. S. REID, M.L. 8vo. 5*s*. 6*d*.

SELECT LETTERS. After the Edition of ALBERT WATSON, M.A. Translated by G. E. JEANS, M.A., Fellow of Hertford College, Oxford, and Assistant-Master at Haileybury. 8vo. 10*s*. 6*d*.

(See also *Classical Series*.)

Euripides.—MEDEA. Edited, with Introduction and Notes, by A. W. VERRALL, M.A., Fellow and Lecturer of Trinity College, Cambridge. 8vo. 7*s*. 6*d*.

INTRODUCTION TO THE STUDY OF EURIPIDES. By Professor J. P. MAHAFFY. Fcap. 8vo. 1*s*. 6*d*. (*Classical Writers Series*.)

(See also *Classical Series*.)

Herodotus.—BOOKS I.—III. THE EMPIRES OF THE EAST. Edited, with Notes and Introductions, by Rev. A. H. SAYCE, M.A., LL.D., Fellow of Queen's College, Oxford, and Deputy-Professor of Comparative Philology. 8vo.

[*Nearly ready*.

BOOKS IV.—IX. Edited by REGINALD W. MACAN, M.A., Lecturer in Ancient History at Brasenose College, Oxford. 8vo.

[*In preparation*.

Homer.—THE ILIAD. Edited, with Introduction and Notes, by WALTER LEAF, M.A., Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge, and the late J. H. PRATT, M.A. 8vo. *[In preparation.*

THE ILIAD. Translated into English Prose. By ANDREW LANG, M.A., WALTER LEAF, M.A., and ERNEST MYERS, M.A. Crown 8vo. 12*s.* 6*d.*

THE ODYSSEY. Done into English by S. H. BUTCHER, M.A., Professor of Greek in the University of Edinburgh, and ANDREW LANG, M.A., late Fellow of Merton College, Oxford. Fourth Edition, revised and corrected. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

INTRODUCTION TO THE STUDY OF HOMER. By the Right Hon. W. E. GLADSTONE, M.P. 18mo. 1*s.* (*Literature Primers.*)

HOMERIC DICTIONARY. For Use in Schools and Colleges. Translated from the German of Dr. G. AUTENRIETH, with Additions and Corrections, by R. P. KEEP, Ph.D. With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo. 6*s.*

(See also *Classical Series.*)

Horace.—THE WORKS OF HORACE RENDERED INTO ENGLISH PROSE. With Introductions, Running Analysis, Notes, &c. By J. LONSDALE, M.A., and S. LEE, M.A. (*Globe Edition.*) 3*s.* 6*d.*

(See also *Classical Series.*)

Juvenal.—THIRTEEN SATIRES OF JUVENAL. With a Commentary. By JOHN E. B. MAYOR, M.A., Professor of Latin in the University of Cambridge. Second Edition, enlarged. Crown 8vo. Vol. I. 7*s.* 6*d.* Vol. II. 10*s.* 6*d.*

THIRTEEN SATIRES. Translated into English after the Text of J. E. B. MAYOR by HERBERT STRONG, M.A., Professor of Latin, and ALEXANDER LEEPER, M.A., Warden of Trinity College, in the University of Melbourne. Crown 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

(See also *Classical Series.*)

Livy. BOOKS XXI.—XXV. Translated by ALFRED JOHN CHURCH, M.A., of Lincoln College, Oxford, Professor of Latin, University College, London, and WILLIAM JACKSON BRODRIBB, M.A., late Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge. Crown 8vo. 7*s.* 6*d.*

INTRODUCTION TO THE STUDY OF LIVY. By Rev. W. W. CAPES, Reader in Ancient History at Oxford. Fcap. 8vo. 1*s.* 6*d.* (*Classical Writers Series.*)

(See also *Classical Series.*)

Martial.—BOOKS I. AND II. OF THE EPIGRAMS. Edited, with Introduction and Notes, by Professor J. E. B. MAYOR, M.A. 8vo. [*In the press.*

(See also *Classical Series.*)

Phrynichus.—THE NEW PHRYNICHUS; being a Revised Text of the Ecloga of the Grammarian Phrynichus. With Introduction and Commentary by W. GUNION RUTHERFORD, M.A., Head Master of Westminster School. 8vo. 18*s.*

Pindar.—THE EXTANT ODES OF PINDAR. Translated into English, with an Introduction and short Notes, by ERNEST MYERS, M.A., late Fellow of Wadham College, Oxford. Crown 8vo. 5*s.*

Plato.—PHÆDO. Edited by R. D. ARCHER-HIND, M.A., Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge. 8vo. [*In the press.*

PHILEBUS. Edited, with Introduction and Notes, by HENRY JACKSON, M.A., Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge. 8vo. [*In preparation.*

THE REPUBLIC OF PLATO. Translated into English, with an Analysis and Notes, by J. LL. DAVIES, M.A., and D. J. VAUGHAN, M.A. 18mo. 4*s.* 6*d.*

EUTHYPHRO, APOLOGY, CRITO, AND PHÆDO. Translated by F. J. CHURCH. Crown 8vo. 4*s.* 6*d.*

(See also *Classical Series.*)

Plautus.—THE MOSTELLARIA OF PLAUTUS. With Notes, Prolegomena, and Excursus. By WILLIAM RAMSAY, M.A., formerly Professor of Humanity in the University of Glasgow. Edited by Professor GEORGE G. RAMSAY, M.A., of the University of Glasgow. 8vo. 14*s.*

(See also *Classical Series.*)

Sallust.—CATILINE AND JUGURTHA. Translated, with Introductory Essays, by A. W. POLLARD, B.A. Crown 8vo. 6*s.*

(See also *Classical Series.*)

Tacitus.—THE ANNALS. Edited, with Introductions and Notes, by G. O. HOLBROOKE, M.A., Professor of Latin in Trinity College, Hartford, U.S.A. With Maps. 8vo. 16*s.*

THE ANNALS. Translated by A. J. CHURCH, M.A., Professor of Latin in the University of London, and W. J. BRODRIBB, M.A. With Notes and Maps. New Edition. Crown 8vo. 7*s.* 6*d.*

Tacitus (*continued*)—

THE HISTORIES. Edited, with Introduction and Notes, by Rev. WALTER SHORT, M.A., and Rev. W. A. SPOONER, M.A., Fellows of New College, Oxford. 8vo. [*In preparation.*

THE HISTORY. Translated by A. J. CHURCH, M.A., Professor of Latin in the University of London, and W. J. BRODRIBB, M.A. With Notes and a Map. New Edition. Crown 8vo. 6*s.*

THE AGRICOLA AND GERMANY, WITH THE DIALOGUE ON ORATORY. Translated by A. J. CHURCH, M.A., and W. J. BRODRIBB, M.A. With Notes and Maps. New and Revised Edition. Crown 8vo. 4*s.* 6*d.*

INTRODUCTION TO THE STUDY OF TACITUS. By A. J. CHURCH, M.A. and W. J. BRODRIBB, M.A. Fcap. 8vo. 18mo. 1*s.* 6*d.* (*Classical Writers Series.*)

Theocritus, Bion, and Moschus. Rendered into English Prose with Introductory Essay by ANDREW LANG, M.A. Crown 8vo. 6*s.*

Virgil.—THE WORKS OF VIRGIL RENDERED INTO ENGLISH PROSE, with Notes, Introductions, Running Analysis, and an Index, by JAMES LONSDALE, M.A., and SAMUEL LEE, M.A. New Edition. Globe 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

THE ÆNEID. Translated by J. W. MACKAIL, M.A., Fellow of Balliol College, Oxford. Crown 8vo. [*In preparation.*

GRAMMAR, COMPOSITION, & PHILOLOGY.

Belcher.—SHORT EXERCISES IN LATIN PROSE COMPOSITION AND EXAMINATION PAPERS IN LATIN GRAMMAR, to which is prefixed a Chapter on Analysis of Sentences. By the Rev. H. BELCHER, M.A., Assistant-Master in King's College School, London. New Edition. 18mo. 1*s.* 6*d.*

KEY TO THE ABOVE (for Teachers only). 2*s.* 6*d.*

SHORT EXERCISES IN LATIN PROSE COMPOSITION. Part II., On the Syntax of Sentences, with an Appendix, including EXERCISES IN LATIN IDIOMS, &c. 18mo. 2*s.*

KEY TO THE ABOVE. [*Nearly ready.*

Blackie.—GREEK AND ENGLISH DIALOGUES FOR USE IN SCHOOLS AND COLLEGES. By JOHN STUART BLACKIE, Emeritus Professor of Greek in the University of Edinburgh. New Edition. Fcap. 8vo. *2s. 6d.*

Ellis.—PRACTICAL HINTS ON THE QUANTITATIVE PRONUNCIATION OF LATIN, for the use of Classical Teachers and Linguists. By A. J. ELLIS, B.A., F.R.S. Extra fcap. 8vo. *4s. 6d.*

England.—EXERCISES ON LATIN SYNTAX AND IDIOM, ARRANGED WITH REFERENCE TO ROBY'S SCHOOL LATIN GRAMMAR. By E. B. ENGLAND, M.A., Assistant Lecturer at the Owens College, Manchester. Crown 8vo. *2s. 6d.* Key for Teachers only, *2s. 6d.*

Goodwin.—Works by W. W. GOODWIN, LL.D., Professor of Greek in Harvard University, U.S.A.

SYNTAX OF THE MOODS AND TENSES OF THE GREEK VERB. New Edition, revised. Crown 8vo. *6s. 6d.*

A GREEK GRAMMAR. New Edition, revised. Crown 8vo. *6s.*

"It is the best Greek Grammar of its size in the English language."—ATHENÆUM.

A GREEK GRAMMAR FOR SCHOOLS. Crown 8vo. *3s. 6d.*

Greenwood.—THE ELEMENTS OF GREEK GRAMMAR, including Accidence, Irregular Verbs, and Principles of Derivation and Composition; adapted to the System of Crude Forms. By J. G. GREENWOOD, Principal of Owens College, Manchester. New Edition. Crown 8vo. *5s. 6d.*

Hodgson.—MYTHOLOGY FOR LATIN VERSIFICATION. A brief Sketch of the Fables of the Ancients, prepared to be rendered into Latin Verse for Schools. By F. HODGSON, B.D., late Provost of Eton. New Edition, revised by F. C. HODGSON, M.A. 18mo. *3s.*

Jackson.—FIRST STEPS TO GREEK PROSE COMPOSITION. By BLOMFIELD JACKSON, M.A., Assistant-Master in King's College School, London. New Edition, revised and enlarged. 18mo. *1s. 6d.*

KEY TO FIRST STEPS (for Teachers only). 18mo. *3s. 6d.*

Jackson (*continued*)—

SECOND STEPS TO GREEK PROSE COMPOSITION, with Miscellaneous Idioms, Aids to Accentuation, and Examination Papers in Greek Scholarship. 18mo. *2s. 6d.*

KEY TO SECOND STEPS (for Teachers only). 18mo. *3s. 6d.*

Kynaston.—EXERCISES IN THE COMPOSITION OF GREEK IAMBIC VERSE by Translations from English Dramatists. By Rev. H. KYNASTON, M.A., Principal of Cheltenham College. With Introduction, Vocabulary, &c. Extra fcap. 8vo. *4s. 6d.*

KEY TO THE SAME (for Teachers only). Extra fcap. 8vo. *4s. 6d.*

Macmillan.—FIRST LATIN GRAMMAR. By M. C. MACMILLAN, M.A., late Scholar of Christ's College, Cambridge; sometime Assistant-Master in St. Paul's School. New Edition, enlarged. 18mo. *1s. 6d.* A SHORT SYNTAX is in preparation to follow the ACCIDENCE.

Marshall.—A TABLE OF IRREGULAR GREEK VERBS, classified according to the arrangement of Curtius's Greek Grammar. By J. M. MARSHALL, M.A., one of the Masters in Clifton College. 8vo, cloth. New Edition. *1s.*

Mayor (John E. B.)—FIRST GREEK READER. Edited after KARL HALM, with Corrections and large Additions by Professor JOHN E. B. MAYOR, M.A., Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge. New Edition, revised. Fcap. 8vo. *4s. 6d.*

Mayor (Joseph B.)—GREEK FOR BEGINNERS. By the Rev. J. B. MAYOR, M.A., Professor of Classical Literature in King's College, London. Part I., with Vocabulary, *1s. 6d.* Parts II. and III., with Vocabulary and Index, *3s. 6d.* Complete in one Vol. fcap. 8vo. *4s. 6d.*

Nixon.—PARALLEL EXTRACTS arranged for translation into English and Latin, with Notes on Idioms. By J. E. NIXON, M.A., Fellow and Classical Lecturer, King's College, Cambridge. Part I.—Historical and Epistolary. New edition, revised and enlarged. Crown 8vo. *3s. 6d.*

Postgate and Vince.—A DICTIONARY OF LATIN ETYMOLOGY. By J. P. POSTGATE, M.A., and C. A. VINCE, M.A. [*In preparation.*

Potts (A. W.)—Works by ALEXANDER W. POTTS, M.A., LL.D., late Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge; Head-Master of the Fettes College, Edinburgh.

HINTS TOWARDS LATIN PROSE COMPOSITION. New Edition. Extra fcap. 8vo. *3s.*

PASSAGES FOR TRANSLATION INTO LATIN PROSE. Edited with Notes and References to the above. New Edition. Extra fcap. 8vo. *2s. 6d.*

LATIN VERSIONS OF PASSAGES FOR TRANSLATION INTO LATIN PROSE (for Teachers only). *2s. 6d.*

Roby.—A GRAMMAR OF THE LATIN LANGUAGE, from Plautus to Suetonius. By H. J. ROBY, M.A., late Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge. In Two Parts. Third Edition. Part I. containing:—Book I. Sounds. Book II. Inflexions. Book III. Word-formation. Appendices. Crown 8vo. *8s. 6d.* Part II. Syntax, Prepositions, &c. Crown 8vo. *10s. 6d.*

"Marked by the clear and practised insight of a master in his art. A book that would do honour to any country."—ATHENÆUM.

SCHOOL LATIN GRAMMAR. By the same Author. Crown 8vo. *5s.*

Rush.—SYNTHETIC LATIN DELECTUS. A First Latin Construing Book arranged on the Principles of Grammatical Analysis. With Notes and Vocabulary. By E. RUSH, B.A. With Preface by the Rev. W. F. MOULTON, M.A., D.D. New and Enlarged Edition. Extra fcap. 8vo. *2s. 6d.*

Rust.—FIRST STEPS TO LATIN PROSE COMPOSITION. By the Rev. G. RUST, M.A., of Pembroke College, Oxford, Master of the Lower School, King's College, London. New Edition. 18mo. *1s. 6d.*

Rutherford.—Works by W. GUNION RUTHERFORD, M.A., Head-Master of Westminster School.

A FIRST GREEK GRAMMAR. New Edition, enlarged. Extra fcap. 8vo. *1s. 6d.*

THE NEW PHRYNICHUS; being a Revised Text of the Ecloga of the Grammarian Phrynichus. With Introduction and Commentary. 8vo. *18s.*

Thring.—Works by the Rev. E. THRING, M.A., Head-Master of Uppingham School.

A LATIN GRADUAL. A First Latin Construing Book for Beginners. New Edition, enlarged, with Coloured Sentence Maps. Fcap. 8vo. *2s. 6d.*

A MANUAL OF MOOD CONSTRUCTIONS. Fcap. 8vo. *1s. 6d.*

White.—FIRST LESSONS IN GREEK. Adapted to GOODWIN'S GREEK GRAMMAR, and designed as an introduction to the ANABASIS OF XENOPHON. By JOHN WILLIAMS WHITE, Ph.D., Assistant-Professor of Greek in Harvard University. Crown 8vo. *4s. 6d.*

Wright.—Works by J. WRIGHT, M.A., late Head Master of Sutton Coldfield School.

A HELP TO LATIN GRAMMAR; or, The Form and Use of Words in Latin, with Progressive Exercises. Crown 8vo. *4s. 6d.*

THE SEVEN KINGS OF ROME. An Easy Narrative, abridged from the First Book of Livy by the omission of Difficult Passages; being a First Latin Reading Book, with Grammatical Notes and Vocabulary. New and revised Edition. Fcap. 8vo. *3s. 6d.*

FIRST LATIN STEPS; OR, AN INTRODUCTION BY A SERIES OF EXAMPLES TO THE STUDY OF THE LATIN LANGUAGE. Crown 8vo. *3s.*

ATTIC PRIMER. Arranged for the Use of Beginners. Extra fcap. 8vo. *2s. 6d.*

A COMPLETE LATIN COURSE, comprising Rules with Examples, Exercises, both Latin and English, on each Rule and Vocabularies. Crown 8vo. *2s. 6d.*

Wright (H. C.)—EXERCISES ON THE LATIN SYNTAX. By H. C. WRIGHT, B.A., Assistant-Master at Haileybury College. 18mo. [*In preparation.*

ANTIQUITIES, ANCIENT HISTORY, AND PHILOSOPHY.

Arnold.—Works by W. T. ARNOLD, B.A.

A HANDBOOK OF LATIN EPIGRAPHY. [*In preparation.*

THE ROMAN SYSTEM OF PROVINCIAL ADMINISTRATION TO THE ACCESSION OF CONSTANTINE THE GREAT. Crown 8vo. 6*s.*

Beesly.—STORIES FROM THE HISTORY OF ROME. By Mrs. BEESLEY. Fcap. 8vo. 2*s.* 6*d.*

Classical Writers.—Edited by JOHN RICHARD GREEN, M.A., LL.D. Fcap. 8vo. 1*s.* 6*d.* each.

EURIPIDES. By Professor MAHAFFY.

MILTON. By the Rev. STOPFORD A. BROOKE, M.A.

LIVY. By the Rev. W. W. CAPES, M.A.

VIRGIL. By Professor NETTLESHIP, M.A.

SOPHOCLES. By Professor L. CAMPBELL, M.A.

DEMOSTHENES. By Professor S. H. BUTCHER, M.A.

TACITUS. By Professor A. J. CHURCH, M.A., and W. J. BRODRIBB, M.A.

Freeman.—HISTORY OF ROME. By EDWARD A. FREEMAN, D.C.L., LL.D., Hon. Fellow of Trinity College, Oxford. (*Historical Course for Schools.*) 18mo. [*In the press.*

Fyffe.—A SCHOOL HISTORY OF GREECE. By C. A. FYFFE, M.A., late Fellow of University College, Oxford. Crown 8vo. [*In preparation.*

Geddes.—THE PROBLEM OF THE HOMERIC POEMS. By W. D. GEDDES, Professor of Greek in the University of Aberdeen. 8vo. 14*s.*

Gladstone.—Works by the Rt. Hon. W. E. GLADSTONE, M.P.

THE TIME AND PLACE OF HOMER. Crown 8vo. 6*s.* 6*d.*

A PRIMER OF HOMER. 18mo. 1*s.*

Goodwin.—A TEXT-BOOK OF GREEK PHILOSOPHY, based on RITTER and PRELLER'S "Historia Philosophiae Graecae et Romanae." By ALFRED GOODWIN, M.A., Fellow of Balliol College, Oxford, and Professor of Greek in University College, London. 8vo. [*In preparation.*

Jackson.—A MANUAL OF GREEK PHILOSOPHY. By HENRY JACKSON, M.A., Fellow and Prælector in Ancient Philosophy, Trinity College, Cambridge. [*In preparation.*

Jebb.—Works by R. C. JEBB, M.A., Professor of Greek in the University of Glasgow.

THE ATTIC ORATORS FROM ANTIPHON TO ISAEOS. 2 vols. 8vo. 25*s.*

SELECTIONS FROM THE ATTIC ORATORS, ANTIPHON, ANDOKIDES, LYSIAS, ISOKRATES, AND ISÆOS. Edited, with Notes. Being a companion volume to the preceding work. 8vo. 12*s.* 6*d.*

A PRIMER OF GREEK LITERATURE. 18mo. 1*s.*

Kiepert.—MANUAL OF ANCIENT GEOGRAPHY, Translated from the German of Dr. HEINRICH KIEPERT. Crown 8vo. 5*s.*

Mahaffy.—Works by J. P. MAHAFFY, M.A., Professor of Ancient History in Trinity College, Dublin, and Hon. Fellow of Queen's College, Oxford.

SOCIAL LIFE IN GREECE; from Homer to Menander. Fourth Edition, revised and enlarged. Crown 8vo. 9*s.*

RAMBLES AND STUDIES IN GREECE. With Illustrations. Second Edition. With Map. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

A PRIMER OF GREEK ANTIQUITIES. With Illustrations. 18mo. 1*s.*

EURIPIDES. 18mo. 1*s.* 6*d.* (*Classical Writers Series.*)

Mayor (J. E. B.)—BIBLIOGRAPHICAL CLUE TO LATIN LITERATURE. Edited after HÜBNER, with large Additions by Professor JOHN E. B. MAYOR. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

Ramsay.—A SCHOOL HISTORY OF ROME. By G. G. RAMSAY, M.A., Professor of Humanity in the University of Glasgow. With Maps. Crown 8vo. [*In preparation.*

Wilkins.—A PRIMER OF ROMAN ANTIQUITIES. By Professor WILKINS. Illustrated. 18mo. 1*s.*

MATHEMATICS.

(1) Arithmetic, (2) Algebra, (3) Euclid and Elementary Geometry, (4) Mensuration, (5) Higher Mathematics.

ARITHMETIC.

Aldis.—THE GIANT ARITHMOS. A most Elementary Arithmetic for Children. By MARY STEADMAN ALDIS. With Illustrations. Globe 8vo. *2s. 6d.*

Brook-Smith (J.).—ARITHMETIC IN THEORY AND PRACTICE. By J. BROOK-SMITH, M.A., LL.B., St. John's College, Cambridge; Barrister-at-Law; one of the Masters of Cheltenham College. New Edition, revised. Crown 8vo. *4s. 6d.*

Candler.—HELP TO ARITHMETIC. Designed for the use of Schools. By H. CANDLER, M.A., Mathematical Master of Uppingham School. Extra fcap. 8vo. *2s. 6d.*

Dalton.—RULES AND EXAMPLES IN ARITHMETIC. By the Rev. T. DALTON, M.A., Assistant-Master of Eton College. New Edition. 18mo. *2s. 6d.*

[*Answers to the Examples are appended.*

Pedley.—EXERCISES IN ARITHMETIC for the Use of Schools. Containing more than 7,000 original Examples. By S. PEDLEY, late of Tamworth Grammar School. Crown 8vo. *5s.*

Smith.—Works by the Rev. BARNARD SMITH, M.A., late Rector of Glaston, Rutland, and Fellow and Senior Bursar of S. Peter's College, Cambridge.

ARITHMETIC AND ALGEBRA, in their Principles and Application; with numerous systematically arranged Examples taken from the Cambridge Examination Papers, with especial reference to the Ordinary Examination for the B.A. Degree. New Edition, carefully Revised. Crown 8vo. *10s. 6d.*

ARITHMETIC FOR SCHOOLS. New Edition. Crown 8vo. *4s. 6d.*

A KEY TO THE ARITHMETIC FOR SCHOOLS. New Edition. Crown 8vo. *8s. 6d.*

Smith.—Works by the Rev. BARNARD SMITH, M.A. (*continued*)—

EXERCISES IN ARITHMETIC. Crown 8vo, limp cloth, 2*s.* With Answers, 2*s.* 6*d.*

Answers separately, 6*d.*

SCHOOL CLASS-BOOK OF ARITHMETIC. 18mo, cloth. 3*s.*

Or sold separately, in Three Parts, 1*s.* each.

KEYS TO SCHOOL CLASS-BOOK OF ARITHMETIC. Parts I., II., and III., 2*s.* 6*d.* each.

SHILLING BOOK OF ARITHMETIC FOR NATIONAL AND ELEMENTARY SCHOOLS. 18mo, cloth. Or separately, Part I. 2*d.*; Part II. 3*d.*; Part III. 7*d.* Answers. 6*d.*

THE SAME, with Answers complete. 18mo, cloth. 1*s.* 6*d.*

KEY TO SHILLING BOOK OF ARITHMETIC. 18mo. 4*s.* 6*d.*

EXAMINATION PAPERS IN ARITHMETIC. 18mo. 1*s.* 6*d.* The same, with Answers, 18mo, 2*s.* Answers, 6*d.*

KEY TO EXAMINATION PAPERS IN ARITHMETIC. 18mo. 4*s.* 6*d.*

THE METRIC SYSTEM OF ARITHMETIC, ITS PRINCIPLES AND APPLICATIONS, with numerous Examples, written expressly for Standard V. in National Schools. New Edition. 18mo, cloth, sewed. 3*d.*

A CHART OF THE METRIC SYSTEM, on a Sheet, size 42 in. by 34 in. on Roller, mounted and varnished. New Edition. Price 3*s.* 6*d.*

Also a Small Chart on a Card, price 1*d.*

EASY LESSONS IN ARITHMETIC, combining Exercises in Reading, Writing, Spelling, and Dictation. Part I. for Standard I. in National Schools. Crown 8vo. 9*d.*

EXAMINATION CARDS IN ARITHMETIC. (Dedicated to Lord Sandon.) With Answers and Hints.

Standards I. and II. in box, 1*s.* Standards III., IV., and V., in boxes, 1*s.* each. Standard VI. in Two Parts, in boxes, 1*s.* each.

A and B papers, of nearly the same difficulty, are given so as to prevent copying, and the colours of the A and B papers differ in each Standard, and from those of every other Standard, so that a master or mistress can see at a glance whether the children have the proper papers.

ALGEBRA.

Dalton.—RULES AND EXAMPLES IN ALGEBRA. By the Rev. T. DALTON, M.A., Assistant-Master of Eton College. Part I. New Edition. 18mo. *2s.* Part II. 18mo. *2s. 6d.*

Jones and Cheyne.—ALGEBRAICAL EXERCISES. Progressively Arranged. By the Rev. C. A. JONES, M.A., and C. H. CHEYNE, M.A., F.R.A.S., Mathematical Masters of Westminster School. New Edition. 18mo. *2s. 6d.*

Smith.—ARITHMETIC AND ALGEBRA, in their Principles and Application; with numerous systematically arranged Examples taken from the Cambridge Examination Papers, with especial reference to the Ordinary Examination for the B.A. Degree. By the Rev. BARNARD SMITH, M.A., late Rector of Glaston, Rutland, and Fellow and Senior Bursar of St. Peter's College, Cambridge. New Edition, carefully Revised. Crown 8vo. *10s. 6d.*

Todhunter.—Works by I. TODHUNTER, M.A., F.R.S., D.Sc., of St. John's College, Cambridge.

"Mr. Todhunter is chiefly known to Students of Mathematics as the author of a series of admirable mathematical text-books, which possess the rare qualities of being clear in style and absolutely free from mistakes, typographical or other."—SATURDAY REVIEW.

ALGEBRA FOR BEGINNERS. With numerous Examples. New Edition. 18mo. *2s. 6d.*

KEY TO ALGEBRA FOR BEGINNERS. Crown 8vo. *6s. 6d.*

ALGEBRA. For the Use of Colleges and Schools. New Edition. Crown 8vo. *7s. 6d.*

KEY TO ALGEBRA FOR THE USE OF COLLEGES AND SCHOOLS. Crown 8vo. *10s. 6d.*

EUCLID & ELEMENTARY GEOMETRY.

Constable.—GEOMETRICAL EXERCISES FOR BEGINNERS. By SAMUEL CONSTABLE. Crown 8vo. *3s. 6d.*

Cuthbertson.—EUCLIDIAN GEOMETRY. By FRANCIS CUTHBERTSON, M.A., LL.D., Head Mathematical Master of the City of London School. Extra fcap. 8vo. *4s. 6d.*

Dodgson.—EUCLID. BOOKS I. AND II. Edited by CHARLES L. DODGSON, M.A., Student and late Mathematical Lecturer of Christ Church, Oxford. Second Edition, with words substituted for the Algebraical Symbols used in the First Edition. Crown 8vo. 2*s.*

*** The text of this Edition has been ascertained, by counting the words, to be *less than five-sevenths* of that contained in the ordinary editions.

Kitchener.—A GEOMETRICAL NOTE-BOOK, containing Easy Problems in Geometrical Drawing preparatory to the Study of Geometry. For the use of Schools. By F. E. KITCHENER, M.A., Mathematical Master at Rugby. New Edition. 4to. 2*s.*

Mault.—NATURAL GEOMETRY: an Introduction to the Logical Study of Mathematics. For Schools and Technical Classes. With Explanatory Models, based upon the Tachymetrical works of Ed. Lagout. By A. MAULT. 18mo. 1*s.*

Models to Illustrate the above, in Box, 12*s.* 6*d.*

Syllabus of Plane Geometry (corresponding to Euclid, Books I.—VI.). Prepared by the Association for the Improvement of Geometrical Teaching. New Edition. Crown 8vo. 1*s.*

Todhunter.—THE ELEMENTS OF EUCLID. For the Use of Colleges and Schools. By I. TODHUNTER, M.A., F.R.S., D.Sc., of St. John's College, Cambridge. New Edition. 18mo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

KEY TO EXERCISES IN EUCLID. Crown 8vo. 6*s.* 6*d.*

Wilson (J. M.).—ELEMENTARY GEOMETRY. BOOKS I.—V. Containing the Subjects of Euclid's first Six Books. Following the Syllabus of the Geometrical Association. By the Rev. J. M. WILSON, M.A., Head Master of Clifton College. New Edition. Extra fcap. 8vo. 4*s.* 6*d.*

MENSURATION.

Tebay.—ELEMENTARY MENSURATION FOR SCHOOLS. With numerous examples. By SEPTIMUS TEBAY, B.A., Head Master of Queen Elizabeth's Grammar School, Rivington. Extra fcap. 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

Todhunter.—MENSURATION FOR BEGINNERS. By I. TODHUNTER, M.A., F.R.S., D.Sc., of St. John's College, Cambridge. With numerous Examples. New Edition. 18mo. 2*s.* 6*d.*

HIGHER MATHEMATICS.

Airy.—Works by Sir G. B. AIRY, K.C.B., formerly Astronomer-Royal:—

ELEMENTARY TREATISE ON PARTIAL DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS. Designed for the Use of Students in the Universities. With Diagrams. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. 5*s.* 6*d.*

ON THE ALGEBRAICAL AND NUMERICAL THEORY OF ERRORS OF OBSERVATIONS AND THE COMBINATION OF OBSERVATIONS. Second Edition, revised. Crown 8vo. 6*s.* 6*d.*

Alexander (T.).—ELEMENTARY APPLIED MECHANICS. Being the simpler and more practical Cases of Stress and Strain wrought out individually from first principles by means of Elementary Mathematics. By T. ALEXANDER, C.E., Professor of Civil Engineering in the Imperial College of Engineering, Tokei, Japan. Crown 8vo. Part I. 4*s.* 6*d.*

Alexander and Thomson.—ELEMENTARY APPLIED MECHANICS. By THOMAS ALEXANDER, C.E., Professor of Engineering in the Imperial College of Engineering, Tokei, Japan; and ARTHUR WATSON THOMSON, C.E., B.Sc., Professor of Engineering at the Royal College, Cirencester. Part II. TRANSVERSE STRESS. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

Bayma.—THE ELEMENTS OF MOLECULAR MECHANICS. By JOSEPH BAYMA, S.J., Professor of Philosophy, Stonyhurst College. Demy 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

Beasley.—AN ELEMENTARY TREATISE ON PLANE TRIGONOMETRY. With Examples. By R. D. BEASLEY, M.A. Eighth Edition, revised and enlarged. Crown 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

Blackburn (Hugh).—ELEMENTS OF PLANE TRIGONOMETRY, for the use of the Junior Class in Mathematics in the University of Glasgow. By HUGH BLACKBURN, M.A., late Professor of Mathematics in the University of Glasgow. Globe 8vo. 1*s.* 6*d.*

Boole.—Works by G. BOOLE, D.C.L., F.R.S., late Professor of Mathematics in the Queen's University, Ireland.

A TREATISE ON DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS. Third and Revised Edition. Edited by I. TODHUNTER. Crown 8vo. 14*s.*

Boole.—Works by G. BOOLE, D.C.L., &c. (*continued*)—

A TREATISE ON DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS. Supplementary Volume. Edited by I. TODHUNTER. Crown 8vo. 8*s.* 6*d.*

THE CALCULUS OF FINITE DIFFERENCES. Third Edition, revised by J. F. MOULTON. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

Cambridge Senate-House Problems and Riders, with Solutions:—

1875—PROBLEMS AND RIDERS. By A. G. GREENHILL, M.A. Crown 8vo. 8*s.* 6*d.*

1878—SOLUTIONS OF SENATE-HOUSE PROBLEMS. By the Mathematical Moderators and Examiners. Edited by J. W. L. GLAISHER, M.A., Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge. 12*s.*

Cheyne.—AN ELEMENTARY TREATISE ON THE PLANETARY THEORY. By C. H. H. CHEYNE, M.A., F.R.A.S. With a Collection of Problems. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. 6*s.* 6*d.*

Christie.—A COLLECTION OF ELEMENTARY TEST-QUESTIONS IN PURE AND MIXED MATHEMATICS; with Answers and Appendices on Synthetic Division, and on the Solution of Numerical Equations by Horner's Method. By JAMES R. CHRISTIE, F.R.S., Royal Military Academy, Woolwich. Crown 8vo. 8*s.* 6*d.*

Clausius.—MECHANICAL THEORY OF HEAT. By R. CLAUSIUS. Translated by WALTER R. BROWNE, M.A., late Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

Clifford.—THE ELEMENTS OF DYNAMIC. An Introduction to the Study of Motion and Rest in Solid and Fluid Bodies. By W. K. CLIFFORD, F.R.S., late Professor of Applied Mathematics and Mechanics at University College, London. Part I.—KINEMATIC. Crown 8vo. 7*s.* 6*d.*

Cotterill.—A TREATISE ON APPLIED MECHANICS. By JAMES COTTERILL, M.A., F.R.S., Professor of Applied Mechanics at the Royal Naval College, Greenwich. With Illustrations. 8vo. [*In the press.*

Day. — PROPERTIES OF CONIC SECTIONS PROVED GEOMETRICALLY. Part I. THE ELLIPSE. With Problems. By the Rev. H. G. DAY, M.A. 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

Day (R. E.)—ELECTRIC LIGHT ARITHMETIC. By R. E. DAY, M.A., Evening Lecturer in Experimental Physics at King's College, London. Pott 8vo. 2*s.*

Drew.—GEOMETRICAL TREATISE ON CONIC SECTIONS. By W. H. DREW, M.A., St. John's College, Cambridge. New Edition, enlarged. Crown 8vo. 5*s.*

SOLUTIONS TO THE PROBLEMS IN DREW'S CONIC SECTIONS. Crown 8vo. 4*s.* 6*d.*

Dyer.—EXERCISES IN ANALYTICAL GEOMETRY. Compiled and arranged by J. M. DYER, M.A., Senior Mathematical Master in the Classical Department of Cheltenham College. With Illustrations. Crown 8vo. 4*s.* 6*d.*

Edgar (J. H.) and Pritchard (G. S.).—NOTE-BOOK ON PRACTICAL SOLID OR DESCRIPTIVE GEOMETRY. Containing Problems with help for Solutions. By J. H. EDGAR, M.A., Lecturer on Mechanical Drawing at the Royal School of Mines, and G. S. PRITCHARD. Fourth Edition, revised by ARTHUR MEEZE. Globe 8vo. 4*s.* 6*d.*

Ferrers.—Works by the Rev. N. M. FERRERS, M.A., Fellow and Master of Gonville and Caius College, Cambridge.

AN ELEMENTARY TREATISE ON TRILINEAR CO-ORDINATES, the Method of Reciprocal Polars, and the Theory of Projectors. New Edition, revised. Crown 8vo. 6*s.* 6*d.*

AN ELEMENTARY TREATISE ON SPHERICAL HARMONICS, AND SUBJECTS CONNECTED WITH THEM. Crown 8vo. 7*s.* 6*d.*

Frost.—Works by PERCIVAL FROST, M.A., D.Sc., formerly Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge; Mathematical Lecturer at King's College.

AN ELEMENTARY TREATISE ON CURVE TRACING. By PERCIVAL FROST, M.A. 8vo. 12*s.*

SOLID GEOMETRY. A New Edition, revised and enlarged, of the Treatise by FROST and WOLSTENHOLME. In 2 Vols. Vol. I. 8vo. 16*s.*

Hemming.—AN ELEMENTARY TREATISE ON THE DIFFERENTIAL AND INTEGRAL CALCULUS, for the Use of Colleges and Schools. By G. W. HEMMING, M.A., Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge. Second Edition, with Corrections and Additions. 8vo. 9*s.*

Jackson.—GEOMETRICAL CONIC SECTIONS. An Elementary Treatise in which the Conic Sections are defined as the Plane Sections of a Cone, and treated by the Method of Projection. By J. STUART JACKSON, M.A., late Fellow of Gonville and Caius College, Cambridge. Crown 8vo. 4*s.* 6*d.*

Jellet (John H.).—A TREATISE ON THE THEORY OF FRICTION. By JOHN H. JELLET, B.D., Provost of Trinity College, Dublin; President of the Royal Irish Academy. 8vo. 8*s.* 6*d.*

Kelland and Tait.—INTRODUCTION TO QUATERNIONS, with numerous examples. By P. KELLAND, M.A., F.R.S., and P. G. TAIT, M.A., Professors in the Department of Mathematics in the University of Edinburgh. Second Edition. Crown 8vo. 7*s.* 6*d.*

Kempe.—HOW TO DRAW A STRAIGHT LINE: a Lecture on Linkages. By A. B. KEMPE. With Illustrations. Crown 8vo. 1*s.* 6*d.* (*Nature Series.*)

Lock.—ELEMENTARY TRIGONOMETRY. By Rev. J. B. LOCK, M.A., Fellow of Caius College, Cambridge; Assistant-Master at Eton. Globe 8vo. 4*s.* 6*d.*

HIGHER TRIGONOMETRY. By the same Author. Crown 8vo. [*In the Press.*

Lupton.—ELEMENTARY CHEMICAL ARITHMETIC. With 1,100 Problems. By SYDNEY LUPTON, M.A., Assistant-Master in Harrow School. Globe 8vo. 5*s.*

Merriman.—ELEMENTS OF THE METHOD OF LEAST SQUARE. By MANSFIELD MERRIMAN, Ph.D., Professor of Civil and Mechanical Engineering, Lehigh University, Bethlehem, Penn. Crown 8vo. 7*s.* 6*d.*

Morgan.—A COLLECTION OF PROBLEMS AND EXAMPLES IN MATHEMATICS. With Answers. By H. A. MORGAN, M.A., Sadlerian and Mathematical Lecturer of Jesus College, Cambridge. Crown 8vo. 6*s.* 6*d.*

Millar.—ELEMENTS OF DESCRIPTIVE GEOMETRY. By J. B. MILLAR, C.E., Assistant Lecturer in Engineering in Owens College, Manchester. Crown 8vo. 6*s.*

Muir.—A TREATISE ON THE THEORY OF DETERMINANTS. With graduated sets of Examples. For use in Colleges and Schools. By THOS. MUIR, M.A., F.R.S.E., Mathematical Master in the High School of Glasgow. Crown 8vo. 7*s.* 6*d.*

Parkinson.—AN ELEMENTARY TREATISE ON MECHANICS. For the Use of the Junior Classes at the University and the Higher Classes in Schools. By S. PARKINSON, D.D., F.R.S., Tutor and Prælector of St. John's College, Cambridge. With a Collection of Examples. Sixth Edition, revised. Crown 8vo. 9*s.* 6*d.*

Phear.—ELEMENTARY HYDROSTATICS. With Numerous Examples. By J. B. PHEAR, M.A., Fellow and late Assistant Tutor of Clare College, Cambridge. New Edition. Crown 8vo. 5*s.* 6*d.*

Pirie.—LESSONS ON RIGID DYNAMICS. By the Rev. G. PIRIE, M.A., late Fellow and Tutor of Queen's College, Cambridge; Professor of Mathematics in the University of Aberdeen. Crown 8vo. 6*s.*

Puckle.—AN ELEMENTARY TREATISE ON CONIC SECTIONS AND ALGEBRAIC GEOMETRY. With Numerous Examples and Hints for their Solution; especially designed for the Use of Beginners. By G. H. PUCKLE, M.A. New Edition, revised and enlarged. Crown 8vo. 7*s.* 6*d.*

Rawlinson.—ELEMENTARY STATICS. By the Rev. GEORGE RAWLINSON, M.A. Edited by the Rev. EDWARD STURGES, M.A. Crown 8vo. 4*s.* 6*d.*

Reynolds.—MODERN METHODS IN ELEMENTARY GEOMETRY. By E. M. REYNOLDS, M.A., Mathematical Master in Clifton College. Crown 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

Reuleaux.—THE KINEMATICS OF MACHINERY. Outlines of a Theory of Machines. By Professor F REULEAUX. Translated and Edited by Professor A. B. W. KENNEDY, C.E. With 450 Illustrations. Medium 8vo. 21*s*

Robinson.—TREATISE ON MARINE SURVEYING. Prepared for the use of younger Naval Officers. With Questions for Examinations and Exercises principally from the Papers of the Royal Naval College. With the results. By Rev. JOHN L. ROBINSON, Chaplain and Instructor in the Royal Naval College, Greenwich. With Illustrations. Crown 8vo. 7*s.* 6*d.*

CONTENTS.—Symbols used in Charts and Surveying—The Construction and Use of Scales—Laying off Angles—Fixing Positions by Angles – Charts and Chart-Drawing—Instruments and Observing — Base Lines—Triangulation—Levelling—Tides and Tidal Observations—Soundings—Chronometers—Meridian Distances—Method of Plotting a Survey—Miscellaneous Exercises—Index.

Routh.—Works by EDWARD JOHN ROUTH, M.A., F.R.S., D.Sc., late Fellow and Assistant Tutor at St. Peter's College, Cambridge; Examiner in the University of London.

A TREATISE ON THE DYNAMICS OF THE SYSTEM OF RIGID BODIES. With numerous Examples. Fourth and enlarged Edition. Two Vols. Vol. I.—Elementary Parts. 8vo. 14*s.* Vol. II.—The Higher Parts. 8vo. [*In the press.*

Routh—Works by E. J. ROUTH, M.A., F.R.S., D.Sc. (*continued*)—

STABILITY OF A GIVEN STATE OF MOTION, PARTICULARLY STEADY MOTION. Adams' Prize Essay for 1877. 8vo. 8*s*. 6*d*.

Smith (C.).—CONIC SECTIONS. By CHARLES SMITH, M.A., Fellow and Tutor of Sidney Sussex College, Cambridge. Crown 8vo. 7*s*. 6*d*.

Snowball.—THE ELEMENTS OF PLANE AND SPHERICAL TRIGONOMETRY; with the Construction and Use of Tables of Logarithms. By J. C. SNOWBALL, M.A. New Edition. Crown 8vo. 7*s*. 6*d*.

Tait and Steele.—A TREATISE ON DYNAMICS OF A PARTICLE. With numerous Examples. By Professor TAIT and Mr. STEELE. Fourth Edition, revised. Crown 8vo. 12*s*.

Todhunter.—Works by I. TODHUNTER, M.A., F.R.S., D.Sc., of St. John's College, Cambridge.

"Mr. Todhunter is chiefly known to students of Mathematics as the author of a series of admirable mathematical text-books, which possess the rare qualities of being clear in style and absolutely free from mistakes, typographical and other."—SATURDAY REVIEW.

TRIGONOMETRY FOR BEGINNERS. With numerous Examples. New Edition. 18mo. 2*s*. 6*d*.

KEY TO TRIGONOMETRY FOR BEGINNERS. Crown 8vo. 8*s*. 6*d*.

MECHANICS FOR BEGINNERS. With numerous Examples. New Edition. 18mo. 4*s*. 6*d*.

KEY TO MECHANICS FOR BEGINNERS. Crown 8vo. 6*s*. 6*d*.

AN ELEMENTARY TREATISE ON THE THEORY OF EQUATIONS. New Edition, revised. Crown 8vo. 7*s*. 6*d*.

PLANE TRIGONOMETRY. For Schools and Colleges. New Edition. Crown 8vo. 5*s*.

KEY TO PLANE TRIGONOMETRY. Crown 8vo. 10*s*. 6*d*.

A TREATISE ON SPHERICAL TRIGONOMETRY. New Edition, enlarged. Crown 8vo. 4*s*. 6*d*.

PLANE CO-ORDINATE GEOMETRY, as applied to the Straight Line and the Conic Sections. With numerous Examples. New Edition, revised and enlarged. Crown 8vo. 7*s*. 6*d*.

Todhunter.—Works by I. TODHUNTER, M.A., &c. (*continued*)—

A TREATISE ON THE DIFFERENTIAL CALCULUS. With numerous Examples. New Edition. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

A TREATISE ON THE INTEGRAL CALCULUS AND ITS APPLICATIONS. With numerous Examples. New Edition, revised and enlarged. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

EXAMPLES OF ANALYTICAL GEOMETRY OF THREE DIMENSIONS. New Edition, revised. Crown 8vo. 4*s.*

A TREATISE ON ANALYTICAL STATICS. With numerous Examples. New Edition, revised and enlarged. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

A HISTORY OF THE MATHEMATICAL THEORY OF PROBABILITY, from the time of Pascal to that of Laplace. 8vo. 18*s.*

RESEARCHES IN THE CALCULUS OF VARIATIONS, principally on the Theory of Discontinuous Solutions: an Essay to which the Adams' Prize was awarded in the University of Cambridge in 1871. 8vo. 6*s.*

A HISTORY OF THE MATHEMATICAL THEORIES OF ATTRACTION, AND THE FIGURE OF THE EARTH, from the time of Newton to that of Laplace. 2 vols. 8vo. 24*s.*

AN ELEMENTARY TREATISE ON LAPLACE'S, LAME'S, AND BESSEL'S FUNCTIONS. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

Wilson (J. M.).—SOLID GEOMETRY AND CONIC SECTIONS. With Appendices on Transversals and Harmonic Division. For the Use of Schools. By Rev. J. M. WILSON, M.A. Head Master of Clifton College. New Edition. Extra fcap. 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

Wilson.—GRADUATED EXERCISES IN PLANE TRIGONOMETRY. Compiled and arranged by J. WILSON, M.A., and S. R. WILSON, B.A. Crown 8vo. 4*s.* 6*d.*

"The exercises seem beautifully graduated and adapted to lead a student on most gently and pleasantly."—E. J. ROUTH, F.R.S., St. Peter's College, Cambridge.

(See also *Elementary Geometry.*)

Wilson (W. P.).—A TREATISE ON DYNAMICS. By W. P. WILSON, M.A., Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge, and Professor of Mathematics in Queen's College, Belfast. 8vo. 9*s.* 6*d.*

Wolstenholme.—MATHEMATICAL PROBLEMS, on Subjects included in the First and Second Divisions of the Schedule of subjects for the Cambridge Mathematical Tripos Examination. Devised and arranged by JOSEPH WOLSTENHOLME, D.Sc., late Fellow of Christ's College, sometime Fellow of St. John's College, and Professor of Mathematics in the Royal Indian Engineering College. New Edition, greatly enlarged. 8vo. *18s.*

SCIENCE.

(1) Natural Philosophy, (2) Astronomy, (3) Chemistry, (4) Biology, (5) Medicine, (6) Anthropology, (7) Physical Geography and Geology, (8) Agriculture, (9) Political Economy, (10) Mental and Moral Philosophy.

NATURAL PHILOSOPHY.

Airy.—Works by Sir G. B. AIRY, K.C.B., formerly Astronomer-Royal :—

UNDULATORY THEORY OF OPTICS. Designed for the Use of Students in the University. New Edition. Crown 8vo. *6s. 6d.*

ON SOUND AND ATMOSPHERIC VIBRATIONS. With the Mathematical Elements of Music. Designed for the Use of Students in the University. Second Edition, revised and enlarged. Crown 8vo. *9s.*

A TREATISE ON MAGNETISM. Designed for the Use of Students in the University. Crown 8vo. *9s. 6d.*

Airy (Osmond).—A TREATISE ON GEOMETRICAL OPTICS. Adapted for the Use of the Higher Classes in Schools. By OSMUND AIRY, B.A., one of the Mathematical Masters in Wellington College. Extra fcap. 8vo. *3s. 6d.*

Alexander (T.).—ELEMENTARY APPLIED MECHANICS. Being the simpler and more practical Cases of Stress and Strain wrought out individually from first principles by means of Elementary Mathematics. By T. ALEXANDER, C.E., Professor of Civil Engineering in the Imperial College of Engineering, Tokei, Japan. Crown 8vo. Part I. *4s. 6d.*

Alexander — Thomson. — ELEMENTARY APPLIED MECHANICS. By THOMAS ALEXANDER, C.E., Professor of Engineering in the Imperial College of Engineering, Tokei, Japan; and ARTHUR WATSON THOMSON, C.E., B.Sc., Professor of Engineering at the Royal College, Cirencester. Part II. TRANSVERSE STRESS; upwards of 150 Diagrams, and 200 Examples carefully worked out; new and complete method for finding, at every point of a beam, the amount of the greatest bending moment and shearing force during the transit of any set of loads fixed relatively to one another—*e.g.*, the wheels of a locomotive; continuous beams, &c., &c. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

Awdry.—EASY LESSONS ON LIGHT. By Mrs. W. AWDRY. Illustrated. Extra fcap. 8vo. 2*s.* 6*d.*

Ball (R. S.).—EXPERIMENTAL MECHANICS. A Course of Lectures delivered at the Royal College of Science for Ireland. By R. S. BALL, M.A., Professor of Applied Mathematics and Mechanics in the Royal College of Science for Ireland. Cheaper Issue. Royal 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

Chisholm. — THE SCIENCE OF WEIGHING AND MEASURING, AND THE STANDARDS OF MEASURE AND WEIGHT. By H. W. CHISHOLM, Warden of the Standards. With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo. 4*s.* 6*d.* (*Nature Series.*)

Clausius.—MECHANICAL THEORY OF HEAT. By R. CLAUSIUS. Translated by WALTER R. BROWNE, M.A., late Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

Cotterill.—A TREATISE ON APPLIED MECHANICS. By JAMES COTTERILL, M.A., F.R.S., Professor of Applied Mechanics at the Royal Naval College, Greenwich. With Illustrations. 8vo. [*In the press.*

Cumming.—AN INTRODUCTION TO THE THEORY OF ELECTRICITY. By LINNÆUS CUMMING, M.A., one of the Masters of Rugby School. With Illustrations. Crown 8vo. 8*s.* 6*d.*

Daniell.—A TREATISE ON PHYSICS FOR MEDICAL STUDENTS. By ALFRED DANIELL. With Illustrations. 8vo. [*In preparation.*

Day.—ELECTRIC LIGHT ARITHMETIC. By R. E. DAY, M.A., Evening Lecturer in Experimental Physics at King's College, London. Pott 8vo. 2*s.*

Everett.—UNITS AND PHYSICAL CONSTANTS. By J. D. EVERETT, F.R.S., Professor of Natural Philosophy, Queen's College, Belfast. Extra fcap. 8vo. *4s. 6d.*

Huxley.—INTRODUCTORY PRIMER OF SCIENCE. By T. H. HUXLEY, P.R.S., Professor of Natural History in the Royal School of Mines, &c. 18mo. *1s.*

Kempe.—HOW TO DRAW A STRAIGHT LINE; a Lecture on Linkages. By A. B. KEMPE. With Illustrations. Crown 8vo. *1s. 6d.* (*Nature Series.*)

Kennedy.—MECHANICS OF MACHINERY. By A. B. W. KENNEDY, M.Inst.C.E., Professor of Engineering and Mechanical Technology in University College, London. With Illustrations. Crown 8vo. [*In the press.*

Lang.—EXPERIMENTAL PHYSICS. By P. R. SCOTT LANG, M.A., Professor of Mathematics in the University of St. Andrew. Crown 8vo. [*In preparation.*

Martineau (Miss C. A.).—EASY LESSONS ON HEAT. By Miss C. A. MARTINEAU. Illustrated. Extra fcap. 8vo. *2s. 6d.*

Mayer.—SOUND: a Series of Simple, Entertaining, and Inexpensive Experiments in the Phenomena of Sound, for the Use of Students of every age. By A. M. MAYER, Professor of Physics in the Stevens Institute of Technology, &c. With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo. *2s. 6d.* (*Nature Series.*)

Mayer and Barnard.—LIGHT: a Series of Simple, Entertaining, and Inexpensive Experiments in the Phenomena of Light, for the Use of Students of every age. By A. M. MAYER and C. BARNARD. With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo. *2s. 6d.* (*Nature Series.*)

Newton.—PRINCIPIA. Edited by Professor Sir W. THOMSON and Professor BLACKBURNE. 4to, cloth. *31s. 6d.*

THE FIRST THREE SECTIONS OF NEWTON'S PRINCIPIA. With Notes and Illustrations. Also a Collection of Problems, principally intended as Examples of Newton's Methods. By PERCIVAL FROST, M.A. Third Edition. 8vo. *12s.*

Parkinson.—A TREATISE ON OPTICS. By S. PARKINSON, D.D., F.R.S., Tutor and Prælector of St. John's College, Cambridge. New Edition, revised and enlarged. Crown 8vo. *10s. 6d.*

Perry.—STEAM. AN ELEMENTARY TREATISE. By JOHN PERRY, C.E., Whitworth Scholar, Fellow of the Chemical Society, Lecturer in Physics at Clifton College. With numerous Woodcuts and Numerical Examples and Exercises. 18mo. *4s. 6d.*

Rayleigh.—THE THEORY OF SOUND. By LORD RAYLEIGH, M.A., F.R.S., formerly Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge, 8vo. Vol. I. *12s. 6d.* Vol. II. *12s. 6d.*

[Vol. III. *in the press.*

Reuleaux.—THE KINEMATICS OF MACHINERY. Outlines of a Theory of Machines. By Professor F. REULEAUX. Translated and Edited by Professor A. B. W. KENNEDY, C.E. With 450 Illustrations. Medium 8vo. *21s.*

Shann.—AN ELEMENTARY TREATISE ON HEAT, IN RELATION TO STEAM AND THE STEAM-ENGINE. By G. SHANN, M.A. With Illustrations. Crown 8vo. *4s. 6d.*

Spottiswoode.—POLARISATION OF LIGHT. By the late W. SPOTTISWOODE, P.R.S. With many Illustrations. New Edition. Crown 8vo. *3s. 6d.* (*Nature Series.*)

Stewart (Balfour).—Works by BALFOUR STEWART, F.R.S., Professor of Natural Philosophy in the Victoria University the Owens College, Manchester.

PRIMER OF PHYSICS. With numerous Illustrations. New Edition, with Questions. 18mo. *1s.* (*Science Primers.*)

LESSONS IN ELEMENTARY PHYSICS. With numerous Illustrations and Chromolitho of the Spectra of the Sun, Stars, and Nebulæ. New Edition. Fcap. 8vo. *4s. 6d.*

QUESTIONS ON BALFOUR STEWART'S ELEMENTARY LESSONS IN PHYSICS. By Prof. THOMAS H. CORE, Owens College, Manchester. Fcap. 8vo. *2s.*

Stone.—AN ELEMENTARY TREATISE ON SOUND. By W. H. STONE, M.B. With Illustrations. 18mo. *3s. 6d.*

Tait.—AN ELEMENTARY TREATISE ON HEAT. By Professor TAIT, F.R.S.E. Illustrated. Crown 8vo.

[*In the press.*

Thompson.—ELEMENTARY LESSONS IN ELECTRICITY AND MAGNETISM. By SILVANUS P. THOMPSON. Professor of Experimental Physics in University College, Bristol. With Illustrations. Fcap. 8vo. *4s. 6d.*

Todhunter.—NATURAL PHILOSOPHY FOR BEGINNERS. By I. TODHUNTER, M.A., F.R.S., D.Sc.
Part I. The Properties of Solid and Fluid Bodies. 18mo. *3s. 6d.*
Part II. Sound, Light, and Heat. 18mo. *3s. 6d.*

Wright (Lewis).—LIGHT; A COURSE OF EXPERIMENTAL OPTICS, CHIEFLY WITH THE LANTERN. By LEWIS WRIGHT. With nearly 200 Engravings and Coloured Plates. Crown 8vo. *7s. 6d.*

ASTRONOMY.

Airy.—POPULAR ASTRONOMY. With Illustrations by Sir G. B. AIRY, K.C.B., formerly Astronomer-Royal. New Edition. 18mo. *4s. 6d.*

Forbes.—TRANSIT OF VENUS. By G. FORBES, M.A., Professor of Natural Philosophy in the Andersonian University, Glasgow. Illustrated. Crown 8vo. *3s. 6d.* (*Nature Series.*)

Godfray.—Works by HUGH GODFRAY, M.A., Mathematical Lecturer at Pembroke College, Cambridge.

A TREATISE ON ASTRONOMY, for the Use of Colleges and Schools. New Edition. 8vo. *12s. 6d.*

AN ELEMENTARY TREATISE ON THE LUNAR THEORY, with a Brief Sketch of the Problem up to the time of Newton. Second Edition, revised. Crown 8vo. *5s. 6d.*

Lockyer.—Works by J. NORMAN LOCKYER, F.R.S.

PRIMER OF ASTRONOMY. With numerous Illustrations. 18mo. *1s.* (*Science Primers.*)

ELEMENTARY LESSONS IN ASTRONOMY. With Coloured Diagram of the Spectra of the Sun, Stars, and Nebulæ, and numerous Illustrations. New Edition. Fcap. 8vo. *5s. 6d.*

QUESTIONS ON LOCKYER'S ELEMENTARY LESSONS IN ASTRONOMY. For the Use of Schools. By JOHN FORBES-ROBERTSON. 18mo, cloth limp. *1s. 6d.*

THE SPECTROSCOPE AND ITS APPLICATIONS. With Coloured Plate and numerous Illustrations. New Edition. Crown 8vo. *3s. 6d.*

Newcomb.—POPULAR ASTRONOMY. By S. NEWCOMB, LL.D., Professor U.S. Naval Observatory. With 112 Illustrations and 5 Maps of the Stars. Second Edition, revised. 8vo. 18*s.*

"It is unlike anything else of its kind, and will be of more use in circulating a knowledge of Astronomy than nine-tenths of the books which have appeared on the subject of late years."—SATURDAY REVIEW.

CHEMISTRY.

Fleischer.—A SYSTEM OF VOLUMETRIC ANALYSIS. Translated, with Notes and Additions, from the Second German Edition, by M. M. PATTISON MUIR, F.R.S.E. With Illustrations. Crown 8vo. 7*s.* 6*d.*

Jones.—Works by FRANCIS JONES, F.R.S.E., F.C.S., Chemical Master in the Grammar School, Manchester.

THE OWENS COLLEGE JUNIOR COURSE OF PRACTICAL CHEMISTRY. With Preface by Professor ROSCOE, and Illustrations. New Edition. 18mo. 2*s.* 6*d.*

QUESTIONS ON CHEMISTRY. A Series of Problems and Exercises in Inorganic and Organic Chemistry. Fcap. 8vo. 3*s.*

Landauer.—BLOWPIPE ANALYSIS. By J. LANDAUER. Authorised English Edition by J. TAYLOR and W. E. KAY, of Owens College, Manchester. Extra fcap. 8vo. 4*s.* 6*d.*

Lupton.—ELEMENTARY CHEMICAL ARITHMETIC. With 1,100 Problems. By SYDNEY LUPTON, M.A., Assistant-Master at Harrow. Extra fcap. 8vo. 5*s.*

Muir.—PRACTICAL CHEMISTRY FOR MEDICAL STUDENTS. Specially arranged for the first M.B. Course. By M. M. PATTISON MUIR, F.R.S.E. Fcap. 8vo. 1*s.* 6*d.*

Roscoe.—Works by H. E. ROSCOE, F.R.S. Professor of Chemistry in the Victoria University the Owens College, Manchester.

PRIMER OF CHEMISTRY. With numerous Illustrations. New Edition. With Questions. 18mo. 1*s.* (*Science Primers*).

LESSONS IN ELEMENTARY CHEMISTRY, INORGANIC AND ORGANIC. With numerous Illustrations and Chromolitho of the Solar Spectrum, and of the Alkalies and Alkaline Earths. New Edition. Fcap. 8vo. 4*s.* 6*d.*

A SERIES OF CHEMICAL PROBLEMS, prepared with Special Reference to the foregoing, by T. E. THORPE, Ph.D., Professor of Chemistry in the Yorkshire College of Science, Leeds, Adapted for the Preparation of Students for the Government, Science, and Society of Arts Examinations. With a Preface by Professor ROSCOE, F.R.S. New Edition, with Key. 18mo. 2*s.*

Roscoe and Schorlemmer.—INORGANIC AND ORGANIC CHEMISTRY. A Complete Treatise on Inorganic and Organic Chemistry. By Professor H. E. ROSCOE, F.R.S., and Professor C. SCHORLEMMER, F.R.S. With numerous Illustrations. Medium 8vo.

Vols. I. and II.—INORGANIC CHEMISTRY.

Vol. I.—The Non-Metallic Elements. 21*s.* Vol. II. Part I.—Metals. 18*s.* Vol. II. Part II.—Metals. 18*s.*

Vol. III.—ORGANIC CHEMISTRY. Part I.—THE CHEMISTRY OF THE HYDROCARBONS and their Derivatives, or ORGANIC CHEMISTRY. With numerous Illustrations. Medium 8vo. 21*s.* [*Part II. in the press.*

Schorlemmer.—A MANUAL OF THE CHEMISTRY OF THE CARBON COMPOUNDS, OR ORGANIC CHEMISTRY. By C. SCHORLEMMER, F.R.S., Professor of Chemistry in the Victoria University the Owens College, Manchester. With Illustrations. 8vo. 14*s.*

Thorpe.—A SERIES OF CHEMICAL PROBLEMS, prepared with Special Reference to Professor Roscoe's Lessons in Elementary Chemistry, by T. E. THORPE, Ph.D., Professor of Chemistry in the Yorkshire College of Science, Leeds, adapted for the Preparation of Students for the Government, Science, and Society of Arts Examinations. With a Preface by Professor ROSCOE. New Edition, with Key. 18mo. 2*s.*

Thorpe and Rücker.—A TREATISE ON CHEMICAL PHYSICS. By Professor THORPE, F.R.S., and Professor RÜCKER, of the Yorkshire College of Science. Illustrated. 8vo. [*In preparation.*

Wright.—METALS AND THEIR CHIEF INDUSTRIAL APPLICATIONS. BY C. ALDER WRIGHT, D.Sc., &c., Lecturer on Chemistry in St. Mary's Hospital Medical School. Extra fcap. 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

BIOLOGY.

Allen.—ON THE COLOUR OF FLOWERS, as Illustrated in the British Flora. By GRANT ALLEN. With Illustrations. Crown 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.* (*Nature Series.*)

Balfour.—A TREATISE ON COMPARATIVE EMBRYOLOGY. By F. M. BALFOUR, M.A., F.R.S., Fellow and Lecturer of Trinity College, Cambridge. With Illustrations. In 2 vols. 8vo. Vol. I. 18*s.* Vol. II. 21*s.*

Bettany.—FIRST LESSONS IN PRACTICAL BOTANY. By G. T. BETTANY, M.A., F.L.S., Lecturer in Botany at Guy's Hospital Medical School. 18mo. 1*s.*

Darwin (Charles).—MEMORIAL NOTICES OF CHARLES DARWIN, F.R.S., &c. By Professor HUXLEY, P.R.S., G. J. ROMANES, F.R.S., ARCHIBALD GEIKIE, F.R.S., and W. T. THISELTON DYER, F.R.S. Reprinted from *Nature*. With a Portrait, engraved by C. H. JEENS. Crown 8vo. 2*s.* 6*d.* (*Nature Series.*)

Dyer and Vines.—THE STRUCTURE OF PLANTS. By Professor THISELTON DYER, F.R.S., assisted by SYDNEY VINES, D.Sc., Fellow and Lecturer of Christ's College, Cambridge, and F. O. BOWER, M.A., Lecturer in the Normal School of Science. With numerous Illustrations. [*In preparation.*

Flower (W. H.).—AN INTRODUCTION TO THE OSTEOLOGY OF THE MAMMALIA. Being the substance of the Course of Lectures delivered at the Royal College of Surgeons of England in 1870. By Professor W. H. FLOWER, F.R.S., F.R.C.S. With numerous Illustrations. New Edition, enlarged. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

Foster.—Works by MICHAEL FOSTER, M.D., F.R.S., Professor of Physiology in the University of Cambridge.

PRIMER OF PHYSIOLOGY. With numerous Illustrations. New Edition. 18mo. 1*s.*

A TEXT-BOOK OF PHYSIOLOGY. With Illustrations. Fourth Edition, revised. 8vo. 21*s.*

Foster and Balfour.—THE ELEMENTS OF EMBRYOLOGY. By MICHAEL FOSTER, M.A., M.D., LL.D., F.R.S., Professor of Physiology in the University of Cambridge, Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge, and the late FRANCIS M. BALFOUR, M.A., LL.D., F.R.S., Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge, and Professor of Animal Morphology in the University. Second Edition, revised. Edited by ADAM SEDGWICK, M.A., Fellow and Assistant Lecturer of Trinity College, Cambridge, and WALTER HEAPE, Demonstrator in the Morphological Laboratory of the University of Cambridge. With Illustrations. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

Foster and Langley.—A COURSE OF ELEMENTARY PRACTICAL PHYSIOLOGY. By Prof. MICHAEL FOSTER, M.D., F.R.S., &c., and J. N. LANGLEY, B.A. New Edition. Crown 8vo. 6*s.*

Gamgee.—A TEXT-BOOK OF THE PHYSIOLOGICAL CHEMISTRY OF THE ANIMAL BODY. Including an Account of the Chemical Changes occurring in Disease. By A. GAMGEE, M.D., F.R.S., Professor of Physiology in the Victoria University the Owens College, Manchester. 2 Vols. 8vo. With Illustrations. Vol. I. 18*s.* [*Vol. II. in the press.*

Gegenbaur.—ELEMENTS OF COMPARATIVE ANATOMY. By Professor CARL GEGENBAUR. A Translation by F. JEFFREY BELL, B.A. Revised with Preface by Professor E. RAY LANKESTER, F.R.S. With numerous Illustrations. 8vo. 21*s.*

Gray.—STRUCTURAL BOTANY, OR ORGANOGRAPHY ON THE BASIS OF MORPHOLOGY. To which are added the principles of Taxonomy and Phytography, and a Glossary of Botanical Terms. By Professor ASA GRAY, LL.D. 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

Hooker.—Works by Sir J. D. HOOKER, K.C.S.I., C.B., M.D., F.R.S., D.C.L.

PRIMER OF BOTANY. With numerous Illustrations. New Edition. 18mo. 1*s.* (*Science Primers.*)

THE STUDENT'S FLORA OF THE BRITISH ISLANDS. New Edition, revised. Globe 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

Huxley.—Works by Professor HUXLEY, P.R.S.

INTRODUCTORY PRIMER OF SCIENCE. 18mo. 1*s.* (*Science Primers.*)

LESSONS IN ELEMENTARY PHYSIOLOGY. With numerous Illustrations. New Edition. Fcap. 8vo. 4*s.* 6*d.*

QUESTIONS ON HUXLEY'S PHYSIOLOGY FOR SCHOOLS. By T. ALCOCK, M.D. 18mo. 1*s.* 6*d.*

PRIMER OF ZOOLOGY. 18mo. (*Science Primers.*) [*In preparation.*

Huxley and Martin.—A COURSE OF PRACTICAL INSTRUCTION IN ELEMENTARY BIOLOGY. By Professor HUXLEY, P.R.S., assisted by H. N. MARTIN, M.B., D.Sc. New Edition, revised. Crown 8vo. 6*s.*

Lankester.—Works by Professor E. RAY LANKESTER, F.R.S.

A TEXTBOOK OF ZOOLOGY. Crown 8vo. [*In preparation.*

DEGENERATION: A CHAPTER IN DARWINISM. Illustrated. Crown 8vo. 2*s.* 6*d.* (*Nature Series.*)

Lubbock.—Works by SIR JOHN LUBBOCK, M.P., F.R.S., D.C.L.

THE ORIGIN AND METAMORPHOSES OF INSECTS. With numerous Illustrations. New Edition. Crown 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.* (*Nature Series.*)

ON BRITISH WILD FLOWERS CONSIDERED IN RELATION TO INSECTS. With numerous Illustrations. New Edition. Crown 8vo. 4*s.* 6*d.* (*Nature Series*).

M'Kendrick.—OUTLINES OF PHYSIOLOGY IN ITS RELATIONS TO MAN. By J. G. M'KENDRICK, M.D., F.R.S.E. With Illustrations. Crown 8vo. 12*s.* 6*d.*

Martin and Moale.—ON THE DISSECTION OF VERTEBRATE ANIMALS. By Professor H. N. MARTIN and W. A. MOALE. Crown 8vo. [*In preparation.*

(See also page 41.)

Miall.—STUDIES IN COMPARATIVE ANATOMY.

No. I.—The Skull of the Crocodile: a Manual for Students. By L. C. MIALL, Professor of Biology in the Yorkshire College and Curator of the Leeds Museum. 8vo. 2*s.* 6*d.*

No. II.—Anatomy of the Indian Elephant. By L. C. MIALL and F. GREENWOOD. With Illustrations. 8vo. 5*s.*

Mivart.—Works by ST. GEORGE MIVART, F.R.S Lecturer in Comparative Anatomy at St. Mary's Hospital.

LESSONS IN ELEMENTARY ANATOMY. With upwards of 400 Illustrations. Fcap. 8vo. 6*s.* 6*d.*

THE COMMON FROG. With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.* (*Nature Series.*)

Müller.—THE FERTILISATION OF FLOWERS. By Professor HERMANN MÜLLER. Translated and Edited by D'ARCY W. THOMPSON, B.A., Scholar of Trinity College, Cambridge. With a Preface by CHARLES DARWIN, F.R.S. With numerous Illustrations. Medium 8vo. 21*s.*

Oliver.—Works by DANIEL OLIVER, F.R.S., &c., Professor of Botany in University College, London, &c.

FIRST BOOK OF INDIAN BOTANY. With numerous Illustrations. Extra fcap. 8vo. 6*s.* 6*d.*

LESSONS IN ELEMENTARY BOTANY. With nearly 200 Illustrations. New Edition. Fcap. 8vo. 4*s.* 6*d.*

Parker.—A COURSE OF INSTRUCTION IN ZOOTOMY (VERTEBRATA). By T. JEFFREY PARKER, B.Sc. London, Professor of Biology in the University of Otago. With Illustrations. Crown 8vo. [*In the press.*

Parker and Bettany.—THE MORPHOLOGY OF THE SKULL. By Professor PARKER and G. T. BETTANY. Illustrated. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

Romanes.—THE SCIENTIFIC EVIDENCES OF ORGANIC EVOLUTION. By G. J. ROMANES, M.A., LL.D., F.R.S., Zoological Secretary to the Linnean Society. Crown 8vo. 2*s.* 6*d* (*Nature Series.*)

Smith.—Works by JOHN SMITH, A.L.S., &c.

A DICTIONARY OF ECONOMIC PLANTS. Their History, Products, and Uses. 8vo. 14*s.*

DOMESTIC BOTANY: An Exposition of the Structure and Classification of Plants, and their Uses for Food, Clothing, Medicine, and Manufacturing Purposes. With Illustrations. New Issue. Crown 8vo. 12*s.* 6*d.*

MEDICINE.

Brunton.—Works by T. LAUDER BRUNTON, M.D., Sc.D., F.R.C.P., F.R.S., Examiner in Materia Medica in the University of London, late Examiner in Materia Medica in the University of Edinburgh, and the Royal College of Physicians, London.

A TREATISE ON MATERIA MEDICA. 8vo. [*In the press.*

TABLES OF MATERIA MEDICA: A Companion to the Materia Medica Museum. With Illustrations. New Edition Enlarged. 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

Hamilton.—A TEXT-BOOK OF PATHOLOGY. By D. J. HAMILTON, Professor of Pathological Anatomy (Sir Erasmus Wilson Chair), University of Aberdeen. 8vo. [*In preparation.*

Ziegler-Macalister.—TEXT-BOOK OF PATHOLOGICAL ANATOMY AND PATHOGENESIS. By Professor ERNST ZIEGLER of Tübingen. Translated and Edited for English Students by DONALD MACALISTER, M.A., M.B., B.Sc., Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge. With numerous Illustrations. Medium 8vo. Part I.—GENERAL PATHOLOGICAL ANATOMY. 12*s.* 6*d.* [PART II. *in the press.*

ANTHROPOLOGY.

Flower.—FASHION IN DEFORMITY, as Illustrated in the Customs of Barbarous and Civilised Races. By Professor FLOWER, F.R.S., F.R.C.S. With Illustrations. Crown 8vo 2*s.* 6*d.* (*Nature Series*).

Tylor.—ANTHROPOLOGY. An Introduction to the Study of Man and Civilisation. By E. B. TYLOR, D.C.L., F.R.S. With numerous Illustrations. Crown 8vo. 7*s.* 6*d.*

PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY & GEOLOGY.

Blanford.—THE RUDIMENTS OF PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY FOR THE USE OF INDIAN SCHOOLS; with a Glossary of Technical Terms employed. By H. F. BLANFORD, F.R.S. New Edition, with Illustrations. Globe 8vo. 2*s.* 6*d.*

Geikie.—Works by ARCHIBALD GEIKIE, F.R.S., Director General of the Geological Surveys of the United Kingdom.

PRIMER OF PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY. With numerous Illustrations. New Edition. With Questions. 18mo. 1*s.* (*Science Primers.*)

ELEMENTARY LESSONS IN PHYSICAL GEOGRAPHY. With numerous Illustrations. Fcap. 8vo. 4*s.* 6*d.*
QUESTIONS ON THE SAME. 1*s.* 6*d.*

PRIMER OF GEOLOGY. With numerous Illustrations. New Edition. 18mo. 1*s.* (*Science Primers.*)

ELEMENTARY LESSONS IN GEOLOGY. With Illustrations. Fcap. 8vo. [*In preparation.*

TEXT-BOOK OF GEOLOGY. With numerous Illustrations. 8vo. 28*s.*

OUTLINES OF FIELD GEOLOGY. With Illustrations. New Edition. Extra fcap. 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

Huxley.—PHYSIOGRAPHY. An Introduction to the Study of Nature. By Professor HUXLEY, P.R.S. With numerous Illustrations, and Coloured Plates. New and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. 6*s.*

AGRICULTURE.

Frankland.—AGRICULTURAL CHEMICAL ANALYSIS, A Handbook of. By PERCY FARADAY FRANKLAND, Ph.D., B.Sc., F.C.S., Associate of the Royal School of Mines, and Demonstrator of Practical and Agricultural Chemistry in the Normal School of Science and Royal School of Mines, South Kensington Museum. Founded upon *Leitfaden für die Agricultur-Chemische Analyse*, von Dr. F. KROCKER. Crown 8vo. *7s. 6d.*

Tanner.—Works by HENRY TANNER, F.C.S., M.R.A.C., Examiner in the Principles of Agriculture under the Government Department of Science, sometime Professor of Agricultural Science, University College, Aberystwith.

ELEMENTARY LESSONS IN THE SCIENCE OF AGRICULTURAL PRACTICE. Fcap. 8vo. *3s. 6d.*

FIRST PRINCIPLES OF AGRICULTURE. 18mo. *1s.*

THE PRINCIPLES OF AGRICULTURE. A Series of Reading Books for use in Elementary Schools. Prepared by HENRY TANNER, F.C.S., M.R.A.C. Extra fcap. 8vo.

I. The Alphabet of the Principles of Agriculture. *6d.*

II. Further Steps in the Principles of Agriculture. *1s.*

III. Elementary School Readings in the Principles of Agriculture for the third stage. *1s.*

POLITICAL ECONOMY.

Cossa.—GUIDE TO THE STUDY OF POLITICAL ECONOMY. By Dr. LUIGI COSSA, Professor in the University of Pavia. Translated from the Second Italian Edition. With a Preface by W. STANLEY JEVONS, F.R.S. Crown 8vo. *4s. 6d.*

Fawcett.—POLITICAL ECONOMY FOR BEGINNERS. By MILLICENT G. FAWCETT. New Edition. 18mo. *2s. 6d.*

Fawcett.—A MANUAL OF POLITICAL ECONOMY. By Right Hon. HENRY FAWCETT, M.P., F.R.S. New Edition, revised and enlarged. Crown 8vo. *12s.*

Jevons.—PRIMER OF POLITICAL ECONOMY. By W. STANLEY JEVONS, LL.D., M.A., F.R.S. New Edition. 18mo. *1s.* (*Science Primers.*)

Marshall.—THE ECONOMICS OF INDUSTRY. By A. MARSHALL, M.A., late Principal of University College, Bristol, and MARY P. MARSHALL, late Lecturer at Newnham Hall, Cambridge. Extra fcap. 8vo. *2s. 6d.*

Sidgwick.—THE PRINCIPLES OF POLITICAL ECONOMY. By HENRY SIDGWICK, M.A., Prælector in Moral and Political Philosophy in Trinity College, Cambridge, Author of "The Methods of Ethics." 8vo. *16s.*

Walker.—POLITICAL ECONOMY. By FRANCIS A. WALKER, M.A., Ph.D., Author of "The Wages Question," "Money," "Money in its Relation to Trade," &c. 8vo. *10s. 6d.*

MENTAL & MORAL PHILOSOPHY.

Caird.—MORAL PHILOSOPHY, An Elementary Treatise on. By Prof. E. CAIRD, of Glasgow University. Fcap. 8vo.
[*In preparation.*

Calderwood.—HANDBOOK OF MORAL PHILOSOPHY. By the Rev. HENRY CALDERWOOD, LL.D., Professor of Moral Philosophy, University of Edinburgh. New Edition. Crown 8vo. *6s.*

Clifford.—SEEING AND THINKING. By the late Professor W. K. CLIFFORD, F.R.S. With Diagrams. Crown 8vo. *3s. 6d.* (*Nature Series.*)

Jevons.—Works by the late W. STANLEY JEVONS, LL.D., M.A., F.R.S.

PRIMER OF LOGIC. New Edition. 18mo. *1s.* (*Science Primers.*)

ELEMENTARY LESSONS IN LOGIC; Deductive and Inductive, with copious Questions and Examples, and a Vocabulary of Logical Terms. New Edition. Fcap. 8vo. *3s. 6d.*

THE PRINCIPLES OF SCIENCE. A Treatise on Logic and Scientific Method. New and Revised Edition. Crown 8vo. *12s. 6d.*

STUDIES IN DEDUCTIVE LOGIC. Crown 8vo. *6s.*

Robertson.—ELEMENTARY LESSONS IN PSYCHOLOGY. By G. CROOM ROBERTSON, Professor of Mental Philosophy, &c., University College, London. [*In preparation.*

Sidgwick.—THE METHODS OF ETHICS. By HENRY SIDGWICK, M.A., Prælector in Moral and Political Philosophy in Trinity College, Cambridge. Second Edition. 8vo. 14*s.*

HISTORY AND GEOGRAPHY.

Arnold.—THE ROMAN SYSTEM OF PROVINCIAL ADMINISTRATION TO THE ACCESSION OF CONSTANTINE THE GREAT. By W. T. ARNOLD, B.A. Crown 8vo. 6*s.*

"Ought to prove a valuable handbook to the student of Roman history."—GUARDIAN.

Beesly.—STORIES FROM THE HISTORY OF ROME. By Mrs. BEESLY. Fcap. 8vo. 2*s.* 6*d.*

"The attempt appears to us in every way successful. The stories are interesting in themselves, and are told with perfect simplicity and good feeling."—DAILY NEWS.

Brook.—FRENCH HISTORY FOR ENGLISH CHILDREN. By SARAH BROOK. With Coloured Maps. Crown 8vo. 6*s.*

Clarke.—CLASS-BOOK OF GEOGRAPHY. By C. B. CLARKE, M.A., F.L.S., F.G.S., F.R.S. New Edition, with Eighteen Coloured Maps. Fcap. 8vo. 3*s.*

Freeman.—OLD-ENGLISH HISTORY. By EDWARD A. FREEMAN, D.C.L., LL.D., late Fellow of Trinity College, Oxford. With Five Coloured Maps. New Edition. Extra fcap. 8vo. 6*s.*

Fyffe.—A SCHOOL HISTORY OF GREECE. By C. A. FYFFE, M.A., Fellow of University College, Oxford. Crown 8vo. [*In preparation.*

Green. — Works by JOHN RICHARD GREEN, M.A., LL.D., Honorary Fellow of Jesus College, Oxford.

SHORT HISTORY OF THE ENGLISH PEOPLE. With Coloured Maps, Genealogical Tables, and Chronological Annals. Crown 8vo. 8*s.* 6*d.* Ninety-second Thousand.

"Stands alone as the one general history of the country, for the sake of which all others, if young and old are wise, will be speedily and surely set aside."—ACADEMY.

ANALYSIS OF ENGLISH HISTORY, based on Green's "Short History of the English People." By C. W. A. TAIT, M.A., Assistant-Master, Clifton College. Crown 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

READINGS FROM ENGLISH HISTORY. Selected and Edited by JOHN RICHARD GREEN. Three Parts. Globe 8vo. 1*s.* 6*d.* each. I. Hengist to Cressy. II. Cressy to Cromwell. III. Cromwell to Balaklava.

A SHORT GEOGRAPHY OF THE BRITISH ISLANDS. By JOHN RICHARD GREEN and ALICE STOPFORD GREEN. With Maps. Fcap. 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

Grove.—A PRIMER OF GEOGRAPHY. By Sir GEORGE GROVE, D.C.L., F.R.G.S. With Illustrations. 18mo. 1*s.* (*Science Primers.*)

Guest.—LECTURES ON THE HISTORY OF ENGLAND. By M. J. GUEST. With Maps. Crown 8vo. 6*s.*

"It is not too much to assert that this is one of the very best class books of English History for young students ever published."—SCOTSMAN.

Historical Course for Schools—Edited by EDWARD A. FREEMAN, D.C.L., late Fellow of Trinity College, Oxford.

I.—GENERAL SKETCH OF EUROPEAN HISTORY. By EDWARD A. FREEMAN, D.C.L. New Edition, revised and enlarged, with Chronological Table, Maps, and Index. 18mo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

II.—HISTORY OF ENGLAND. By EDITH THOMPSON. New Edition, revised and enlarged, with Coloured Maps. 18mo. 2*s.* 6*d.*

III.—HISTORY OF SCOTLAND. By MARGARET MACARTHUR. New Edition. 18mo. 2*s.*

IV.—HISTORY OF ITALY. By the Rev. W. HUNT, M.A. New Edition, with Coloured Maps. 18mo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

Historical Course for Schools.—(*continued*)—

V.—HISTORY OF GERMANY. By J. SIME, M.A. 18mo. 3*s.*

VI.—HISTORY OF AMERICA. By JOHN A. DOYLE. With Maps. 18mo. 4*s.* 6*d.*

EUROPEAN COLONIES. By E. J. PAYNE, M.A. With Maps. 18mo. 4*s.* 6*d.*

FRANCE. By CHARLOTTE M. YONGE. With Maps. 18mo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

GREECE. By EDWARD A. FREEMAN, D.C.L. [*In preparation.*

ROME. By EDWARD A. FREEMAN, D.C.L. [*In the press.*

History Primers—Edited by JOHN RICHARD GREEN, M.A., LL.D., Author of "A Short History of the English People."

ROME. By the Rev. M. CREIGHTON, M.A., late Fellow and Tutor of Merton College, Oxford. With Eleven Maps. 18mo. 1*s.*

"The author has been curiously successful in telling in an intelligent way the story of Rome from first to last."—SCHOOL BOARD CHRONICLE.

GREECE. By C. A. FYFFE, M.A., Fellow and late Tutor of University College, Oxford. With Five Maps. 18mo. 1*s.*

"We give our unqualified praise to this little manual."—SCHOOLMASTER.

EUROPEAN HISTORY. By E. A. FREEMAN, D.C.L., LL.D. With Maps. 18mo. 1*s.*

"The work is always clear, and forms a luminous key to European history."—SCHOOL BOARD CHRONICLE.

GREEK ANTIQUITIES. By the Rev. J. P. MAHAFFY, M.A. Illustrated. 18mo. 1*s.*

"All that is necessary for the scholar to know is told so compactly yet so fully, and in a style so interesting, that it is impossible for even the dullest boy to look on this little work in the same light as he regards his other school books."—SCHOOLMASTER.

CLASSICAL GEOGRAPHY. By H. F. TOZER, M.A. 18mo. 1*s.*

"Another valuable aid to the study of the ancient world. . . . It contains an enormous quantity of information packed into a small space, and at the same time communicated in a very readable shape."—JOHN BULL.

GEOGRAPHY. By GEORGE GROVE, D.C.L. With Maps. 18mo. 1*s.*

"A model of what such a work should be. . . . We know of no short treatise better suited to infuse life and spirit into the dull lists of proper names of which our ordinary class-books so often almost exclusively consist."—TIMES.

History Primers *Continued*—

ROMAN ANTIQUITIES. By Professor WILKINS. Illustrated. 18mo. 1*s*.

"A little book that throws a blaze of light on Roman history, and is, moreover, intensely interesting."—SCHOOL BOARD CHRONICLE.

FRANCE. By CHARLOTTE M. YONGE. 18mo. 1*s*.

"May be considered a wonderfully successful piece of work. . . . Its general merit as a vigorous and clear sketch, giving in a small space a vivid idea of the history of France, remains undeniable."—SATURDAY REVIEW.

Hole.—A GENEALOGICAL STEMMA OF THE KINGS OF ENGLAND AND FRANCE. By the Rev. C. HOLE. On Sheet. 1*s*.

Kiepert—A MANUAL OF ANCIENT GEOGRAPHY. From the German of Dr. H. KIEPERT. Crown 8vo. 5*s*.

Lethbridge.—A SHORT MANUAL OF THE HISTORY OF INDIA. With an Account of INDIA AS IT IS. The Soil, Climate, and Productions; the People, their Races, Religions, Public Works, and Industries; the Civil Services, and System of Administration. By ROPER LETHBRIDGE, M.A., C.I.E., late Scholar of Exeter College, Oxford, formerly Principal of Kishnaghur College, Bengal, Fellow and sometime Examiner of the Calcutta University. With Maps. Crown 8vo. 5*s*.

Michelet.—A SUMMARY OF MODERN HISTORY. Translated from the French of M. MICHELET, and continued to the Present Time, by M. C. M. SIMPSON. Globe 8vo. 4*s*. 6*d*.

Otté.—SCANDINAVIAN HISTORY. By E. C. OTTÉ. With Maps. Globe 8vo. 6*s*.

Ramsay.—A SCHOOL HISTORY OF ROME. By G. G. RAMSAY, M.A., Professor of Humanity in the University of Glasgow. With Maps. Crown 8vo. [*In preparation.*

Tait.—ANALYSIS OF ENGLISH HISTORY, based on Green's "Short History of the English People." By C. W. A. TAIT, M.A., Assistant-Master, Clifton College. Crown 8vo. 3*s*. 6*d*.

Wheeler.—A SHORT HISTORY OF INDIA AND OF THE FRONTIER STATES OF AFGHANISTAN, NEPAUL, AND BURMA. By J. TALBOYS WHEELER. With Maps. Crown 8vo. 12*s*.

"It is the best book of the kind we have ever seen, and we recommend it to a place in every school library."—EDUCATIONAL TIMES.

Yonge (Charlotte M.).—A PARALLEL HISTORY OF FRANCE AND ENGLAND: consisting of Outlines and Dates. By CHARLOTTE M. YONGE, Author of "The Heir of Redclyffe," &c., &c. Oblong 4to. 3*s.* 6*d.*

CAMEOS FROM ENGLISH HISTORY.—FROM ROLLO TO EDWARD II. By the Author of "The Heir of Redclyffe." Extra fcap. 8vo. New Edition. 5*s.*

A SECOND SERIES OF CAMEOS FROM ENGLISH HISTORY.—THE WARS IN FRANCE. New Edition. Extra fcap. 8vo. 5*s.*

A THIRD SERIES OF CAMEOS FROM ENGLISH HISTORY.—THE WARS OF THE ROSES. New Edition. Extra fcap. 8vo. 5*s.*

CAMEOS FROM ENGLISH HISTORY—A FOURTH SERIES. REFORMATION TIMES. Extra fcap. 8vo. 5*s.*

CAMEOS FROM ENGLISH HISTORY.—A FIFTH SERIES. ENGLAND AND SPAIN. Extra fcap. 8vo. 5*s.*

EUROPEAN HISTORY. Narrated in a Series of Historical Selections from the Best Authorities. Edited and arranged by E. M. SEWELL and C. M. YONGE. First Series, 1003—1154. New Edition. Crown 8vo. 6*s.* Second Series, 1088—1228. New Edition. Crown 8vo. 6*s.*

MODERN LANGUAGES AND LITERATURE.

(1) English, (2) French, (3) German, (4) Modern Greek, (5) Italian.

ENGLISH.

Abbott.—A SHAKESPEARIAN GRAMMAR. An attempt to illustrate some of the Differences between Elizabethan and Modern English. By the Rev. E. A. ABBOTT, D.D., Head Master of the City of London School. New Edition. Extra fcap. 8vo. 6*s.*

Brooke.—PRIMER OF ENGLISH LITERATURE. By the Rev. STOPFORD A. BROOKE, M.A. 18mo. 1*s.* (*Literature Primers.*)

Butler.—HUDIBRAS. Part I. Edited, with Introduction and Notes, by ALFRED MILNES, M.A. Crown 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*
[Part II. *in the press.*

Cowper's TASK: AN EPISTLE TO JOSEPH HILL, ESQ.; TIROCINIUM, or a Review of the Schools; and THE HISTORY OF JOHN GILPIN. Edited, with Notes, by WILLIAM BENHAM, B.D. Globe 8vo. 1*s.* (*Globe Readings from Standard Authors.*)

Dowden.—SHAKESPEARE. By Professor DOWDEN. 18mo. 1*s.* (*Literature Primers.*)

Dryden.—SELECT PROSE WORKS. Edited, with Introduction and Notes, by Professor C. D. YONGE. Fcap. 8vo. 2*s.* 6*d.*

Gladstone.—SPELLING REFORM FROM AN EDUCATIONAL POINT OF VIEW. By J. H. GLADSTONE, Ph.D., F.R.S., Member of the School Board for London. New Edition. Crown 8vo. 1*s.* 6*d.*

Globe Readers. For Standards I.—VI. Edited by A. F. MURISON. Sometime English Master at the Aberdeen Grammar School. With Illustrations. Globe 8vo.

Primer I. (48 pp.)	3*d.*	Book III. (232 pp.)	1*s.* 3*d.*
Primer II. (48 pp.)	3*d.*	Book IV. (328 pp.)	1*s.* 9*d.*
Book I. (96 pp.)	6*d.*	Book V. (416 pp.)	2*s.*
Book II. (136 pp.)	9*d.*	Book VI. (448 pp.)	2*s.* 6*d.*

"Among the numerous sets of readers before the public the present series is honourably distinguished by the marked superiority of its materials and the careful ability with which they have been adapted to the growing capacity of the pupils. The plan of the two primers is excellent for facilitating the child's first attempts to read. In the first three following books there is abundance of entertaining reading. . . . . Better food for young minds could hardly be found."—THE ATHENÆUM.

GLOBE READINGS FROM STANDARD AUTHORS.

Cowper's TASK: AN EPISTLE TO JOSEPH HILL, ESQ.; TIROCINIUM, or a Review of the Schools; and THE HISTORY OF JOHN GILPIN. Edited, with Notes, by WILLIAM BENHAM, B.D. Globe 8vo. 1*s.*

GLOBE READINGS FROM STANDARD AUTHORS *Continued*—.

Goldsmith's VICAR OF WAKEFIELD. With a Memoir of Goldsmith by Professor MASSON. Globe 8vo. *1s.*

Lamb's (Charles) TALES FROM SHAKESPEARE. Edited, with Preface, by ALFRED AINGER, M.A. Globe 8vo. *2s.*

Scott's (Sir Walter) LAY OF THE LAST MINSTREL; and THE LADY OF THE LAKE. Edited, with Introductions and Notes, by FRANCIS TURNER PALGRAVE. Globe 8vo. *1s.*

MARMION; and the LORD OF THE ISLES. By the same Editor. Globe 8vo. *1s.*

The Children's Garland from the Best Poets.—Selected and arranged by COVENTRY PATMORE. Globe 8vo. *2s.*

Yonge (Charlotte M.).—A BOOK OF GOLDEN DEEDS OF ALL TIMES AND ALL COUNTRIES. Gathered and narrated anew by CHARLOTTE M. YONGE, the Author of "The Heir of Redclyffe." Globe 8vo. *2s.*

Goldsmith.—THE TRAVELLER, or a Prospect of Society; and THE DESERTED VILLAGE. By OLIVER GOLDSMITH. With Notes, Philological and Explanatory, by J. W. HALES, M.A. Crown 8vo. *6d.*

THE VICAR OF WAKEFIELD. With a Memoir of Goldsmith by Professor MASSON. Globe 8vo. *1s.* (*Globe Readings from Standard Authors.*)

SELECT ESSAYS. Edited, with Introduction and Notes, by Professor C. D. YONGE. Fcap. 8vo. *2s. 6d.*

Hales.—LONGER ENGLISH POEMS, with Notes, Philological and Explanatory, and an Introduction on the Teaching of English. Chiefly for Use in Schools. Edited by J. W. HALES, M.A., Professor of English Literature at King's College, London. New Edition. Extra fcap. 8vo. *4s. 6d.*

Johnson's LIVES OF THE POETS. The Six Chief Lives (Milton, Dryden, Swift, Addison, Pope, Gray), with Macaulay's "Life of Johnson." Edited with Preface by MATTHEW ARNOLD. Crown 8vo. *6s.*

Lamb (Charles).—TALES FROM SHAKESPEARE. Edited, with Preface, by ALFRED AINGER, M.A. (*Globe Readings from Standard Authors.*)

Literature Primers—Edited by JOHN RICHARD GREEN, M.A., LL.D., Author of "A Short History of the English People."

ENGLISH COMPOSITION. By Professor NICHOL. 18mo. 1*s.*

ENGLISH GRAMMAR. By the Rev. R. MORRIS, LL.D., sometime President of the Philological Society. 18mo, cloth. 1*s.*

ENGLISH GRAMMAR EXERCISES. By R. MORRIS, LL.D., and H. C. BOWEN, M.A. 18mo. 1*s.*

EXERCISES ON MORRIS'S PRIMER OF ENGLISH GRAMMAR. By JOHN WETHERELL, of the Middle School, Liverpool College. 18mo. 1*s.*

ENGLISH LITERATURE. By STOPFORD BROOKE, M.A. New Edition. 18mo. 1*s.*

SHAKSPERE. By Professor DOWDEN. 18mo. 1*s.*

THE CHILDREN'S TREASURY OF LYRICAL POETRY. Selected and arranged with Notes by FRANCIS TURNER PALGRAVE. In Two Parts. 18mo. 1*s.* each.

PHILOLOGY. By J. PEILE, M.A. 18mo. 1*s.*

In preparation:—

HISTORY OF THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE. By J. A. H. MURRAY, LL.D.

SPECIMENS OF THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE. To Illustrate the above. By the same Author.

Macmillan's Reading Books.—Adapted to the English and Scotch Codes. Bound in Cloth.

PRIMER. 18mo. (48 pp.) 2*d.*

BOOK	I. for Standard	I.	18mo.	(96 pp.)	4*d.*
,,	II. ,,	II.	18mo.	(144 pp.)	5*d.*
,,	III. ,,	III.	18mo.	(160 pp.)	6*d.*
,,	IV. ,,	IV.	18mo.	(176 pp.)	8*d.*
,,	V. ,,	V.	18mo.	(380 pp.)	1*s.*

Macmillan's Reading-Books *Continued*—

BOOK VI. for Standard VI. Crown 8vo. (430 pp.) 2*s*.

Book VI. is fitted for higher Classes, and as an Introduction to English Literature.

"They are far above any others that have appeared both in form and substance. . . . The editor of the present series has rightly seen that reading books must 'aim chiefly at giving to the pupils the power of accurate, and, if possible, apt and skilful expression; at cultivating in them a good literary taste, and at arousing a desire of further reading.' This is done by taking care to select the extracts from true English classics, going up in Standard VI. course to Chaucer, Hooker, and Bacon, as well as Wordsworth, Macaulay, and Froude. . . . This is quite on the right track, and indicates justly the ideal which we ought to set before us."—GUARDIAN.

Macmillan's Copy-Books—

Published in two sizes, viz. :—

1. Large Post 4to. Price 4*d*. each.
2. Post Oblong. Price 2*d*. each.

1. INITIATORY EXERCISES AND SHORT LETTERS.
*2. WORDS CONSISTING OF SHORT LETTERS.
*3. LONG LETTERS. With words containing Long Letters—Figures.
*4. WORDS CONTAINING LONG LETTERS.
4a. PRACTISING AND REVISING COPY-BOOK. For Nos. 1 to 4.
*5. CAPITALS AND SHORT HALF-TEXT. Words beginning with a Capital.
*6. HALF-TEXT WORDS beginning with Capitals—Figures.
*7. SMALL-HAND AND HALF-TEXT. With Capitals and Figures.
*8. SMALL-HAND AND HALF-TEXT. With Capitals and Figures.
8a. PRACTISING AND REVISING COPY-BOOK. For Nos. 5 to 8.
*9. SMALL-HAND SINGLE HEADLINES—Figures.
10. SMALL-HAND SINGLE HEADLINES—Figures.
11. SMALL-HAND DOUBLE HEADLINES—Figures.
12. COMMERCIAL AND ARITHMETICAL EXAMPLES, &c.
12a. PRACTISING AND REVISING COPY-BOOK. For Nos. 8 to 12.

* *These numbers may be had with Goodman's Patent Sliding Copies.* Large Post 4to. Price 6*d*. each.

Martin.—THE POET'S HOUR: Poetry selected and arranged for Children. By FRANCES MARTIN. New Edition. 18mo. *2s. 6d.*

SPRING-TIME WITH THE POETS: Poetry selected by FRANCES MARTIN. New Edition. 18mo. *3s. 6d.*

Milton.—By STOPFORD BROOKE, M.A. Fcap. 8vo. *1s. 6d.* (*Classical Writers Series.*)

Morris.—Works by the Rev. R. MORRIS, LL.D.

HISTORICAL OUTLINES OF ENGLISH ACCIDENCE, comprising Chapters on the History and Development of the Language, and on Word-formation. New Edition. Extra fcap. 8vo. *6s.*

ELEMENTARY LESSONS IN HISTORICAL ENGLISH GRAMMAR, containing Accidence and Word-formation. New Edition. 18mo. *2s. 6d.*

PRIMER OF ENGLISH GRAMMAR. 18mo. *1s.* (See also *Literature Primers.*)

Oliphant.—THE OLD AND MIDDLE ENGLISH. A New Edition of "THE SOURCES OF STANDARD ENGLISH," revised and greatly enlarged. By T. L. KINGTON OLIPHANT. Extra fcap. 8vo. *9s.*

Palgrave.—THE CHILDREN'S TREASURY OF LYRICAL POETRY. Selected and arranged, with Notes, by FRANCIS TURNER PALGRAVE. 18mo. *2s. 6d.* Also in Two Parts. 18mo. *1s.* each.

Patmore.—THE CHILDREN'S GARLAND FROM THE BEST POET'S. Selected and arranged by COVENTRY PATMORE. Globe 8vo. *2s.* (*Globe Readings from Standard Authors.*)

Plutarch.—Being a Selection from the Lives which Illustrate Shakespeare. North's Translation. Edited, with Introductions, Notes, Index of Names, and Glossarial Index, by the Rev. W. W. SKEAT, M.A. Crown 8vo. *6s.*

Scott's (Sir Walter) LAY OF THE LAST MINSTREL; and THE LADY OF THE LAKE. Edited, with Introduction and Notes, by FRANCIS TURNER PALGRAVE. Globe 8vo. *1s.* (*Globe Readings from Standard Authors.*)

MARMION; and THE LORD OF THE ISLES. By the same Editor. Globe 8vo. *1s.* (*Globe Readings from Standard Authors.*)

Shakespeare.—A SHAKESPEARE MANUAL. By F. G. FLEAY, M.A., late Head Master of Skipton Grammar School. Second Edition. Extra fcap. 8vo. *4s. 6d.*

AN ATTEMPT TO DETERMINE THE CHRONOLOGICAL ORDER OF SHAKESPEARE'S PLAYS. By the Rev. H. PAINE STOKES, B.A. Extra fcap. 8vo. *4s. 6d.*

THE TEMPEST. With Glossarial and Explanatory Notes. By the Rev. J. M. JEPHSON. New Edition. 18mo. *1s.*

PRIMER OF SHAKESPEARE. By Professor DOWDEN. 18mo. *1s.* (*Literature Primers.*)

Sonnenschein and Meiklejohn. — THE ENGLISH METHOD OF TEACHING TO READ. By A. SONNENSCHEIN and J. M. D. MEIKLEJOHN, M.A. Fcap. 8vo.

COMPRISING:

THE NURSERY BOOK, containing all the Two-Letter Words in the Language. *1d.* (Also in Large Type on Sheets for School Walls. *5s.*)

THE FIRST COURSE, consisting of Short Vowels with Single Consonants. *6d.*

THE SECOND COURSE, with Combinations and Bridges, consisting of Short Vowels with Double Consonants. *6d.*

THE THIRD AND FOURTH COURSES, consisting of Long Vowels, and all the Double Vowels in the Language. *6d.*

"These are admirable books, because they are constructed on a principle, and that the simplest principle on which it is possible to learn to read English."—SPECTATOR.

Taylor.—WORDS AND PLACES; or, Etymological Illustrations of History, Ethnology, and Geography. By the Rev. ISAAC TAYLOR, M.A. Third and Cheaper Edition, revised and compressed. With Maps. Globe 8vo. *6s.*

Thring.—THE ELEMENTS OF GRAMMAR TAUGHT IN ENGLISH. By EDWARD THRING, M.A., Head Master of Uppingham. With Questions. Fourth Edition. 18mo. *2s.*

Trench (Archbishop).—Works by R. C. TRENCH, D.D., Archbishop of Dublin.

HOUSEHOLD BOOK OF ENGLISH POETRY, Selected and Arranged, with Notes. Third Edition. Extra fcap. 8vo. *5s. 6d.*

ON THE STUDY OF WORDS. Seventeenth Edition, revised. Fcap. 8vo. *5s.*

Trench (Archbishop) Works by, *continued*—

ENGLISH, PAST AND PRESENT. Eleventh Edition, revised and improved. Fcap. 8vo. 5*s*.

A SELECT GLOSSARY OF ENGLISH WORDS, used formerly in Senses Different from their Present. Fifth Edition, revised and enlarged. Fcap. 8vo. 5*s*.

Vaughan (C.M.).—WORDS FROM THE POETS. By C. M. VAUGHAN. New Edition. 18mo, cloth. 1*s*.

Ward.—THE ENGLISH POETS. Selections, with Critical Introductions by various Writers and a General Introduction by MATTHEW ARNOLD. Edited by T. H. WARD, M.A. 4 Vols. Vol. I. CHAUCER TO DONNE.—Vol. II. BEN JONSON TO DRYDEN.—Vol. III. ADDISON TO BLAKE.—Vol. IV. WORDSWORTH TO ROSSETTI. Crown 8vo. Each 7*s*. 6*d*.

Wetherell.—EXERCISES ON MORRIS'S PRIMER OF ENGLISH GRAMMAR. By JOHN WETHERELL, M.A. 18mo. 1*s*. (*Literature Primers.*)

Wrightson.—THE FUNCTIONAL ELEMENTS OF AN ENGLISH SENTENCE, an Examination of. Together with a New System of Analytical Marks. By the Rev. W. G. WRIGHTSON, M.A., Cantab. Crown 8vo. 5*s*.

Yonge (Charlotte M.).—THE ABRIDGED BOOK OF GOLDEN DEEDS. A Reading Book for Schools and general readers. By the Author of "The Heir of Redclyffe." 18mo, cloth. 1*s*.

GLOBE READINGS EDITION. Complete Edition. Globe 8vo. 2*s*. (See p. 52.)

FRENCH.

Beaumarchais.—LE BARBIER DE SEVILLE. Edited, with Introduction and Notes, by L. P. BLOUET, Assistant Master in St. Paul's School. Fcap. 8vo. 3*s*. 6*d*.

Bowen.—FIRST LESSONS IN FRENCH. By H. COURTHOPE BOWEN, M.A., Principal of the Finsbury Training College for Higher and Middle Schools. Extra fcap. 8vo. 1*s*.

Breymann.—Works by HERMANN BREYMANN, Ph.D., Professor of Philology in the University of Munich.

A FRENCH GRAMMAR BASED ON PHILOLOGICAL PRINCIPLES. Second Edition. Extra fcap. 8vo. *4s. 6d.*

FIRST FRENCH EXERCISE BOOK. Extra fcap. 8vo. *4s. 6d.*

SECOND FRENCH EXERCISE BOOK. Extra fcap. 8vo. *2s. 6d.*

Fasnacht.—THE ORGANIC METHOD OF STUDYING LANGUAGES. By G. EUGÈNE FASNACHT, Author of "Macmillan's Progressive French Course," Editor of "Macmillan's Foreign School Classics," &c. Extra fcap. 8vo. I. French. *3s. 6d.*

A SYNTHETIC FRENCH GRAMMAR FOR SCHOOLS. By the same Author. Crown 8vo. *3s. 6d.*

Macmillan's Progressive French Course.—By G. EUGÈNE FASNACHT, sometime Senior Master of Modern Languages, Harpur Foundation Modern School, Bedford.

I.—FIRST YEAR, containing Easy Lessons on the Regular Accidence. Extra fcap. 8vo. *1s.*

II.—SECOND YEAR, containing Conversational Lessons on Systematic Accidence and Elementary Syntax. With Philological Illustrations and Etymological Vocabulary. *1s. 6d.*

III.—THIRD YEAR, containing a Systematic Syntax, and Lessons in Composition. Extra fcap. 8vo. *2s. 6d.*

THE TEACHER'S COMPANION TO MACMILLAN'S PROGRESSIVE FRENCH COURSE. Third Year. By G. E. FASNACHT. Globe 8vo. [*In the Press.*

Macmillan's Progressive French Readers.—By G. EUGÈNE FASNACHT.

I.—FIRST YEAR, containing Tables, Historical Extracts, Letters, Dialogues, Fables, Ballads, Nursery Songs, &c., with Two Vocabularies: (1) in the order of subjects; (2) in alphabetical order. Extra fcap. 8vo. *2s. 6d.*

II.—SECOND YEAR, containing Fiction in Prose and Verse, Historical and Descriptive Extracts, Essays, Letters, Dialogues, &c. Extra fcap. 8vo. *2s. 6d.*

Macmillan's Foreign School Classics—Edited by G. EUGÈNE FASNACHT. 18mo.

FRENCH.

CORNEILLE—LE CID. Edited by G. E. FASNACHT. 1*s.*

MOLIÈRE—LES FEMMES SAVANTES. By the same Editor. 1*s.*

MOLIÈRE—LE MISANTHROPE. By the same Editor. 1*s.*

MOLIÈRE—LE MÉDECIN MALGRÉ LUI. By the same Editor. 1*s.*

MOLIÈRE—L'AVARE. Edited by L. M. MORIARTY, B.A., Assistant-Master at Rossall. 1*s.*

MOLIERE—LE BOURGEOIS GENTILHOMME. By the same Editor. [*In preparation.*

SELECTIONS FROM FRENCH HISTORIANS. Edited by C. COLBECK, M.A., late Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge; Assistant Master at Harrow. [*In preparation.*

SAND, GEORGE—LA MARE AU DIABLE. Edited by W. E. RUSSELL, M.A., Assistant Master in Haileybury College. 1*s.*

SANDEAU, JULES—MADEMOISELLE DE LA SEIGLIÈRE. Edited by H. C. STEEL, Assistant Master in Wellington College. [*In the press.*

VOLTAIRE—CHARLES XII. Edited by G. E. FASNACHT. [*In preparation.*

GRAMMAR AND GLOSSARY OF THE FRENCH LANGUAGE IN THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY. By G. E. FASNACHT. [*In preparation.*

*** *Other volumes to follow.*

(See also *German Authors*, page 61.)

Masson (Gustave).—A COMPENDIOUS DICTIONARY OF THE FRENCH LANGUAGE (French-English and English-French). Adapted from the Dictionaries of Professor ALFRED ELWALL. Followed by a List of the Principal Diverging Derivations, and preceded by Chronological and Historical Tables. By GUSTAVE MASSON, Assistant Master and Librarian, Harrow School. New Edition. Crown 8vo, half-bound. 6*s.*

Molière.—LE MALADE IMAGINAIRE. Edited, with Introduction and Notes, by FRANCIS TARVER, M.A., Assistant Master at Eton. Fcap. 8vo. 2*s.* 6*d.*

(See also *Macmillan's Foreign School Classics.*)

GERMAN.

Macmillan's Progressive German Course.—By G. EUGÈNE FASNACHT.

Part I.—FIRST YEAR. Easy Lessons and Rules on the Regular Accidence. Extra fcap. 8vo. *1s. 6d.*

Part II.—SECOND YEAR. Conversational Lessons in Systematic Accidence and Elementary Syntax. With Philological Illustrations and Etymological Vocabulary. Extra fcap. 8vo. *2s.*

*** *Keys to the French and German Courses are in preparation.*

Macmillan's Foreign School Classes. Edited by G. EUGÈNE FASNACHT. 18mo.

GERMAN.

GOETHE—GÖTZ VON BERLICHINGEN. Edited by H. A. BULL, M.A., Assistant Master at Wellington. *2s.*

GOETHE—FAUST. PART I. Edited by JANE LEE, Lecturer in Modern Languages at Newnham College, Cambridge. [*In preparation.*

HEINE—SELECTIONS FROM THE PROSE WRITINGS. Edited by C. COLBECK, M.A. [*In the press.*

SCHILLER—DIE JUNGFRAU VON ORLEANS. Edited by JOSEPH GOSTWICK. *2s. 6d.*

SCHILLER—MARIA STUART. Edited by C. SHELDON, M.A., D.Lit., Assistant Master in Clifton College. [*In the press.*

SCHILLER—WILHELM TELL. Edited by G. E. FASNACHT. [*In preparation.*

UHLAND—SELECT BALLADS. Adapted as a First Easy Reading Book for Beginners. Edited by G. E. FASNACHT. *1s.* [*Ready.*

SELECTIONS FROM GERMAN HISTORIANS. By the same Editor. Part I.—Ancient History. [*In preparation.*

*** *Other Volumes to follow.*

(See also *French Authors*, page 60.)

Pylodet.—NEW GUIDE TO GERMAN CONVERSATION: containing an Alphabetical List of nearly 800 Familiar Words; followed by Exercises; Vocabulary of Words in frequent use; Familiar Phrases and Dialogues; a Sketch of German Literature, Idiomatic Expressions, &c. By L. PYLODET. 18mo, cloth limp. *2s. 6d.*

A SYNOPSIS OF GERMAN GRAMMAR. From the above. 18mo. *6d.*

Whitney and Edgren.—A COMPENDIOUS GERMAN AND ENGLISH DICTIONARY, with Notation of Correspondences and Brief Etymologies. By Professor W. D. WHITNEY, assisted by A. H. EDGREN. Crown 8vo. *7s. 6d.*

THE GERMAN-ENGLISH PART, separately, *5s.*

MODERN GREEK.

Vincent and Dickson. — HANDBOOK TO MODERN GREEK. By EDGAR VINCENT and T. G. DICKSON, M.A. Second Edition, revised and enlarged, with Appendix on the relation of Modern and Classical Greek by Professor JEBB. Crown 8vo. *6s.*

ITALIAN.

Dante. — THE PURGATORY OF DANTE. Edited, with Translation and Notes, by A. J. BUTLER, M.A., late Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge. Crown 8vo. *12s. 6d.*

DOMESTIC ECONOMY.

Barker.—FIRST LESSONS IN THE PRINCIPLES OF COOKING. By LADY BARKER. New Edition. 18mo. *1s.*

Berners.—FIRST LESSONS ON HEALTH. By J. BERNERS. New Edition. 18mo. *1s.*

Fawcett.—TALES IN POLITICAL ECONOMY. By MILLICENT GARRETT FAWCETT. Globe 8vo. *3s.*

Frederick.—HINTS TO HOUSEWIVES ON SEVERAL POINTS, PARTICULARLY ON THE PREPARATION OF ECONOMICAL AND TASTEFUL DISHES. By Mrs. FREDERICK. Crown 8vo. *1s.*

"This unpretending and useful little volume distinctly supplies a desideratum. . . . . The author steadily keeps in view the simple aim of 'making every-day meals at home, particularly the dinner, attractive,' without adding to the ordinary household expenses."—SATURDAY REVIEW.

Grand'homme.— CUTTING-OUT AND DRESSMAKING. From the French of Mdlle. E. GRAND'HOMME. With Diagrams. 18mo. 1*s.*

Tegetmeier.—HOUSEHOLD MANAGEMENT AND COOKERY. With an Appendix of Recipes used by the Teachers of the National School of Cookery. By W. B. TEGETMEIER. Compiled at the request of the School Board for London. 18mo. 1*s.*

Thornton.—FIRST LESSONS IN BOOK-KEEPING. By J. THORNTON. New Edition. Crown 8vo. 2*s.* 6*d.*

The object of this volume is to make the theory of Book-keeping sufficiently plain for even children to understand it.

Wright.—THE SCHOOL COOKERY-BOOK. Compiled and Edited by C. E. GUTHRIE WRIGHT, Hon Sec. to the Edinburgh School of Cookery. 18mo. 1*s.*

ART AND KINDRED SUBJECTS.

Anderson.—LINEAR PERSPECTIVE, AND MODEL DRAWING. A School and Art Class Manual, with Questions and Exercises for Examination, and Examples of Examination Papers. By LAURENCE ANDERSON. With Illustrations. Royal 8vo. 2*s.*

Collier.—A PRIMER OF ART. With Illustrations. By JOHN COLLIER. 18mo. 1*s.*

Delamotte.—A BEGINNER'S DRAWING BOOK. By P. H. DELAMOTTE, F.S.A. Progressively arranged. New Edition improved. Crown 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

Ellis.—SKETCHES FROM NATURE. A Handbook for Students and Amateurs. By TRISTRAM J. ELLIS. With a Frontispiece and Ten Illustrations, by H. STACY MARKS, R.A., and Twenty-seven Sketches by the Author. Crown 8vo. 2*s.* 6*d.* (*Art at Home Series.*)

Hunt.—TALKS ABOUT ART. By WILLIAM HUNT. With a Letter from J. E. MILLAIS, R.A. Crown 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

Taylor.—A PRIMER OF PIANOFORTE PLAYING. By FRANKLIN TAYLOR. Edited by GEORGE GROVE. 18mo. 1*s.*

WORKS ON TEACHING.

Blakiston—THE TEACHER. Hints on School Management. A Handbook for Managers, Teachers' Assistants, and Pupil Teachers. By J. R. BLAKISTON, M.A. Crown 8vo. *2s. 6d.* (Recommended by the London, Birmingham, and Leicester School Boards.)

"Into a comparatively small book he has crowded a great deal of exceedingly useful and sound advice. It is a plain, common-sense book, full of hints to the teacher on the management of his school and his children."—SCHOOL BOARD CHRONICLE.

Calderwood—ON TEACHING. By Professor HENRY CALDERWOOD. New Edition. Extra fcap. 8vo. *2s. 6d.*

Fearon.—SCHOOL INSPECTION. By D. R. FEARON, M.A., Assistant Commissioner of Endowed Schools. New Edition. Crown 8vo. *2s. 6d.*

Gladstone.—OBJECT TEACHING. A Lecture delivered at the Pupil-Teacher Centre, William Street Board School, Hammersmith. By J. H. GLADSTONE, Ph.D., F.R.S., Member of the London School Board. With an Appendix. Crown 8vo. *3d.*

"It is a short but interesting and instructive publication, and our younger teachers will do well to read it carefully and thoroughly. There is much in these few pages which they can learn and profit by."—THE SCHOOL GUARDIAN.

DIVINITY.

*** For other Works by these Authors, see THEOLOGICAL CATALOGUE.

Abbott (Rev. E. A.)—BIBLE LESSONS. By the Rev. E. A. ABBOTT, D.D., Head Master of the City of London School. New Edition. Crown 8vo. *4s. 6d.*

"Wise, suggestive, and really profound initiation into religious thought."—GUARDIAN.

Arnold. — A BIBLE-READING FOR SCHOOLS. — THE GREAT PROPHECY OF ISRAEL'S RESTORATION (Isaiah, Chapters xl.—lxvi.). Arranged and Edited for Young Learners. By MATTHEW ARNOLD, D.C.L., formerly Professor of Poetry in the University of Oxford, and Fellow of Oriel. New Edition. 18mo, cloth. 1*s.*

ISAIAH XL.—LXVI. With the Shorter Prophecies allied to it. Arranged and Edited, with Notes, by MATTHEW ARNOLD. Crown 8vo. 5*s.*

Cheetham.—A CHURCH HISTORY OF THE FIRST SIX CENTURIES. By the Ven. ARCHDEACON CHEETHAM. Crown 8vo. [*In the press.*

Curteis.—MANUAL OF THE THIRTY-NINE ARTICLES. By G. H. CURTEIS, M.A., Principal of the Lichfield Theological College. [*In preparation.*

Gaskoin.—THE CHILDREN'S TREASURY OF BIBLE STORIES. By Mrs. HERMAN GASKOIN. Edited with Preface by the Rev. G. F. MACLEAR, D.D. PART I.—OLD TESTAMENT HISTORY. 18mo. 1*s.* PART II.—NEW TESTAMENT. 18mo. 1*s.* PART III.—THE APOSTLES: ST. JAMES THE GREAT, ST. PAUL, AND ST. JOHN THE DIVINE. 18mo. 1*s.*

Golden Treasury Psalter.—Students' Edition. Being an Edition of "The Psalms Chronologically arranged, by Four Friends," with briefer Notes. 18mo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

Greek Testament.—Edited, with Introduction and Appendices, by CANON WESTCOTT and Dr. F. J. A. HORT. Two Vols. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.* each.

Vol. I. The Text.

Vol. II. Introduction and Appendix.

Greek Testament.—Edited by Canon WESTCOTT and Dr. HORT. School Edition of Text. Globe 8vo. [*In the press.*

Hardwick.—Works by Archdeacon HARDWICK:—

A HISTORY OF THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH. Middle Age. From Gregory the Great to the Excommunication of Luther. Edited by WILLIAM STUBBS, M.A., Regius Professor of Modern History in the University of Oxford. With Four Maps. Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

Hardwick.—Works by Archdeacon HARDWICK (*continued*)—

A HISTORY OF THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH DURING THE REFORMATION. Fourth Edition. Edited by Professor STUBBS. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

Jennings and Lowe.—THE PSALMS, WITH INTRODUCTIONS AND CRITICAL NOTES. By A. C. JENNINGS, B.A.; assisted in parts by W. H. LOWE. In 2 vols. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.* each.

Lightfoot.—Works by Right Rev. J. B. LIGHTFOOT, D.D., Bishop of Durham:—

ST. PAUL'S EPISTLE TO THE GALATIANS. A Revised Text, with Introduction, Notes, and Dissertations. Seventh Edition, revised. 8vo. 12*s.*

ST. PAUL'S EPISTLE TO THE PHILIPPIANS. A Revised Text, with Introduction, Notes, and Dissertations. Seventh Edition, revised. 8vo. 12*s.*

ST. CLEMENT OF ROME—THE TWO EPISTLES TO THE CORINTHIANS. A Revised Text, with Introduction and Notes. 8vo. 8*s.* 6*d.*

ST. PAUL'S EPISTLES TO THE COLOSSIANS AND TO PHILEMON. A Revised Text, with Introductions, Notes, and Dissertations. Sixth Edition, revised. 8vo. 12*s.*

THE IGNATIAN EPISTLES. 8vo. [*In the press.*

Maclear.—Works by the Rev. G. F. MACLEAR, D.D., Warden of St. Augustine's College, Canterbury, and late Head-Master of King's College School, London:—

A CLASS-BOOK OF OLD TESTAMENT HISTORY. New Edition, with Four Maps. 18mo. 4*s.* 6*d.*

A CLASS-BOOK OF NEW TESTAMENT HISTORY, including the Connection of the Old and New Testaments. With Four Maps. New Edition. 18mo. 5*s.* 6*d.*

A SHILLING BOOK OF OLD TESTAMENT HISTORY, for National and Elementary Schools. With Map. 18mo, cloth. New Edition.

A SHILLING BOOK OF NEW TESTAMENT HISTORY, for National and Elementary Schools. With Map. 18mo, cloth. New Edition.

Maclear.—Works by the Rev. G. F. MACLEAR, D.D., *continued*—

These works have been carefully abridged from the author's large manuals.

CLASS-BOOK OF THE CATECHISM OF THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND. New Edition. 18mo, cloth. 1*s.* 6*d.*

A FIRST CLASS-BOOK OF THE CATECHISM OF THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND. With Scripture Proofs, for Junior Classes and Schools. New Edition. 18mo. 6*d.*

A MANUAL OF INSTRUCTION FOR CONFIRMATION AND FIRST COMMUNION. WITH PRAYERS AND DEVOTIONS. 32mo, cloth extra, red edges. 2*s.*

Maurice.—THE LORD'S PRAYER, THE CREED, AND THE COMMANDMENTS. A Manual for Parents and Schoolmasters. To which is added the Order of the Scriptures. By the Rev. F. DENISON MAURICE, M.A. 18mo, cloth, limp. 1*s.*

Procter.—A HISTORY OF THE BOOK OF COMMON PRAYER, with a Rationale of its Offices. By Rev. F. PROCTER, M.A. Sixteenth Edition, revised and enlarged. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

Procter and Maclear.—AN ELEMENTARY INTRODUCTION TO THE BOOK OF COMMON PRAYER. Rearranged and supplemented by an Explanation of the Morning and Evening Prayer and the Litany. By the Rev. F. PROCTER and the Rev. Dr. MACLEAR. New and Enlarged Edition, containing the Communion Service and the Confirmation and Baptismal Offices. 18mo. 2*s.* 6*d.*

The Psalms, with Introductions and Critical Notes.—By A. C. JENNINGS, B.A., Jesus College, Cambridge, Tyrwhitt Scholar, Crosse Scholar, Hebrew University, Prizeman, and Fry Scholar of St. John's College; assisted in Parts by W. H. LOWE, M.A., Hebrew Lecturer and late Scholar of Christ's College, Cambridge, and Tyrwhitt Scholar. In 2 vols. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.* each.

Ramsay.—THE CATECHISER'S MANUAL; or, the Church Catechism Illustrated and Explained, for the Use of Clergymen, Schoolmasters, and Teachers. By the Rev. ARTHUR RAMSAY, M.A. New Edition. 18mo. 1*s.* 6*d.*

Simpson.—AN EPITOME OF THE HISTORY OF THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH. By WILLIAM SIMPSON, M.A. New Edition. Fcap. 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d.*

St. John's Epistles.—The Greek Text with Notes and Essays, by BROOKE FOSS WESTCOTT, D.D., Regius Professor of Divinity and Fellow of King's College, Cambridge, Canon of Peterborough, &c. 8vo. 12*s.* 6*d.*

St. Paul's Epistles.—Greek Text, with Introduction and Notes.

THE EPISTLE TO THE GALATIANS. Edited by the Right Rev. J. B. LIGHTFOOT, D.D., Bishop of Durham. Seventh Edition. 8vo. 12*s.*

THE EPISTLE TO THE PHILIPPIANS. By the same Editor. Seventh Edition. 8vo. 12*s.*

THE EPISTLE TO THE COLOSSIANS. By the same Editor. Sixth Edition. 8vo. 12*s.*

THE EPISTLE TO THE ROMANS. Edited by the Very Rev. C. J. VAUGHAN, D.D., Dean of Llandaff, and Master of the Temple. Fifth Edition. Crown 8vo. 7*s.* 6*d.*

THE EPISTLE TO THE THESSALONIANS, COMMENTARY ON THE GREEK TEXT. By JOHN EADIE, D.D., LL.D. Edited by the Rev. W. YOUNG, M.A., with Preface by Professor CAIRNS. 8vo. 12*s.*

The Epistle to the Hebrews. In Greek and English. With Critical and Explanatory Notes. Edited by Rev. FREDERIC RENDALL, M.A., formerly Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge, and Assistant-Master at Harrow School. Crown 8vo. 6*s.*

Trench.—Works by R. C. TRENCH, D.D., Archbishop of Dublin.

NOTES ON THE PARABLES OF OUR LORD. Fourteenth Edition, revised. 8vo. 12*s.*

NOTES ON THE MIRACLES OF OUR LORD. Eleventh Edition, revised. 8vo. 12*s.*

COMMENTARY ON THE EPISTLES TO THE SEVEN CHURCHES IN ASIA. Third Edition, revised. 8vo. 8*s.* 6*d.*

LECTURES ON MEDIEVAL CHURCH HISTORY. Being the substance of Lectures delivered at Queen's College London. Second Edition, revised. 8vo. 12*s.*

SYNONYMS OF THE NEW TESTAMENT. Ninth Edition, revised. 8vo. 12*s.*

Westcott.—Works by BROOKE FOSS WESTCOTT, D.D., Canon of Peterborough, Regius Professor of Divinity, and Fellow of King's College, Cambridge.

A GENERAL SURVEY OF THE HISTORY OF THE CANON OF THE NEW TESTAMENT DURING THE FIRST FOUR CENTURIES. Fifth Edition. With Preface on "Supernatural Religion." Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

INTRODUCTION TO THE STUDY OF THE FOUR GOSPELS. Fifth Edition. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

THE BIBLE IN THE CHURCH. A Popular Account of the Collection and Reception of the Holy Scriptures in the Christian Churches. New Edition. 18mo, cloth. 4*s.* 6*d.*

THE EPISTLES OF ST. JOHN. The Greek Text, with Notes and Essays. 8vo. 12*s.* 6*d.*

THE EPISTLE TO THE HEBREWS. The Greek Text Revised, with Notes and Essays. 8vo. [*In preparation.*

Westcott and Hort.—THE NEW TESTAMENT IN THE ORIGINAL GREEK. The Text Revised by B. F. WESTCOTT, D.D., Regius Professor of Divinity, Canon of Peterborough, and F. J. A. HORT, D.D., Hulsean Professor of Divinity; Fellow of Emmanuel College, Cambridge: late Fellows of Trinity College, Cambridge. 2 vols. Crown 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.* each.

Vol. I. Text.

Vol. II. Introduction and Appendix.

Wilson.—THE BIBLE STUDENT'S GUIDE to the more Correct Understanding of the English Translation of the Old Testament, by reference to the original Hebrew. By WILLIAM WILSON, D.D., Canon of Winchester, late Fellow of Queen's College, Oxford. Second Edition, carefully revised. 4to. cloth. 25*s.*

Yonge (Charlotte M.).—SCRIPTURE READINGS FOR SCHOOLS AND FAMILIES. By CHARLOTTE M. YONGE. Author of "The Heir of Redclyffe." In Five Vols.

FIRST SERIES. GENESIS TO DEUTERONOMY. Extra fcap. 8vo. 1*s.* 6*d.* With Comments, 3*s.* 6*d.*

SECOND SERIES. From JOSHUA to SOLOMON. Extra fcap. 8vo. 1*s.* 6*d.* With Comments, 3*s.* 6*d.*

THIRD SERIES. The KINGS and the PROPHETS. Extra fcap. 8vo. 1*s.* 6*d.* With Comments, 3*s.* 6*d.*

FOURTH SERIES. The GOSPEL TIMES. 1*s.* 6*d.* With Comments, extra fcap. 8vo, 3*s.* 6*d.*

FIFTH SERIES. APOSTOLIC TIMES. Extra fcap. 8vo. 1*s.* 6*d.* With Comments, 3*s.* 6*d.*

Zechariah—Lowe.—THE HEBREW STUDENT'S COMMENTARY ON ZECHARIAH, HEBREW AND LXX. With Excursus on Syllable-dividing, Mĕtheg, Initial Dagesh, and Siman Rapheh. By W. H. LOWE, M.A., Hebrew Lecturer at Christ's College, Cambridge. Demy 8vo. 10*s.* 6*d.*

London: R. Clay, Sons, and Taylor, Printers.

MACMILLAN'S GLOBE LIBRARY.

In Cloth Binding, Globe 8vo, 3s. 6d. each.

"The 'Globe' Editions are admirable for their scholarly editing, their typographical excellence, their compendious form, and their cheapness."—*Saturday Review.*

"Not only truly cheap, but excellent in every way."—*Literary World.*

"A wonderfully cheap and scholarly series."—*Daily Telegraph.*

SHAKESPEARE'S COMPLETE WORKS. Edited by W. G. CLARK, M.A., and W. ALDIS WRIGHT, M.A. With Glossary.

MORTE D'ARTHUR. The Book of King Arthur and of his Noble Knights of the Round Table. The Original Edition of Caxton revised for Modern Use, with Introduction, Notes, and Glossary. By Sir E. STRACHEY.

ROBINSON CRUSOE. Edited after the Original Editions. With a Biographical Introduction by HENRY KINGSLEY, F.R.G.S.

SIR WALTER SCOTT'S POETICAL WORKS. Edited with Biographical and Critical Memoir, by F. T. PALGRAVE. With Introduction and Notes.

VIRGIL. Rendered into English Prose, with Introductions, Notes, Analysis, and Index by J. LONSDALE, M.A., and S. LEE, M.A.

HORACE. Rendered into English Prose, with Introductions, Running Analysis, Notes, and Index, by J. LONSDALE, M.A., and S. LEE, M.A.

DRYDEN'S POETICAL WORKS. Edited, with a Memoir, Revised Text, and Notes, by W. D. CHRISTIE, M.A.

COWPER'S POETICAL WORKS. Edited, with Biographical Introduction and Notes, by W. BENHAM, B.D.

BURNS'S COMPLETE WORKS. Edited from the best Printed and MS. Authorities, with Memoir and Glossarial Index, by ALEXANDER SMITH.

GOLDSMITH'S MISCELLANEOUS WORKS. With Biographical Introduction by Professor MASSON.

POPE'S POETICAL WORKS. Edited, with Notes and Introductory Memoir, by Professor WARD, of Owen's College, Manchester.

SPENSER'S COMPLETE WORKS. Edited from the Original Editions and Manuscripts, with Glossary, by R. MORRIS, and a Memoir by J. W. HALES, M.A.

MILTON'S POETICAL WORKS. Edited, with Introductions, by Professor MASSON.

Now Publishing, in Crown 8vo, price 2*s.* 6*d.* each.

Also in stiff boards, uncut edges, price 2*s.* 6*d.* each.

ENGLISH MEN OF LETTERS.

EDITED BY JOHN MORLEY.

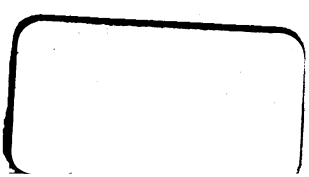
"These excellent biographies should be made class-books for Schools."—*Westminster Review.*

"This admirable series"—*British Quarterly Review.*

"Enjoyable and excellent little books."—*Academy.*

JOHNSON. By LESLIE STEPHEN.
SCOTT. By R. H. HUTTON.
GIBBON. By J. C. MORISON.
SHELLEY. By J. A. SYMONDS.
HUME. By Professor HUXLEY, P.R.S.
GOLDSMITH. By WILLIAM BLACK.
DEFOE. By W. MINTO.
BURNS. By Principal SHAIRP.
SPENSER. By the Very Rev. the DEAN OF ST. PAUL'S.
THACKERAY. By ANTHONY TROLLOPE.
BURKE. By JOHN MORLEY.
BUNYAN. By J. A. FROUDE.
POPE. By LESLIE STEPHEN.
BYRON. By Professor NICHOL.
COWPER. By GOLDWIN SMITH.
LOCKE. By Professor FOWLER.
WORDSWORTH. By F. W. H. MYERS.
DRYDEN. By G. SAINTSBURY.
LANDOR. By Professor SIDNEY COLVIN.
CHARLES LAMB. By Rev. A. AINGER.
BENTLEY. By Professor R. C. JEBB.
DICKENS. By Prof. A. W. WARD.
MACAULAY. By J. C. MORISON.
DE QUINCEY. By Prof. MASSON.
MILTON. By MARK PATTISON.
HAWTHORNE. By HENRY JAMES.
SOUTHEY. By Professor DOWDEN.
CHAUCER. By Prof. A. W. WARD.
GRAY. By E. W. GOSSE.
SWIFT. By LESLIE STEPHEN.
STERNE. By H. D. TRAILL.
FIELDING. By AUSTIN DOBSON.
SHERIDAN. By Mrs. OLIPHANT.

*** *Other Volumes to follow.*

Macmillan & Co.'s New Illustrated Catalogue of Books suitable for PRESENTATION and SCHOOL PRIZES, at prices ranging from SIXPENCE upwards, may now be had, post free.

MACMILLAN AND CO., LONDON.